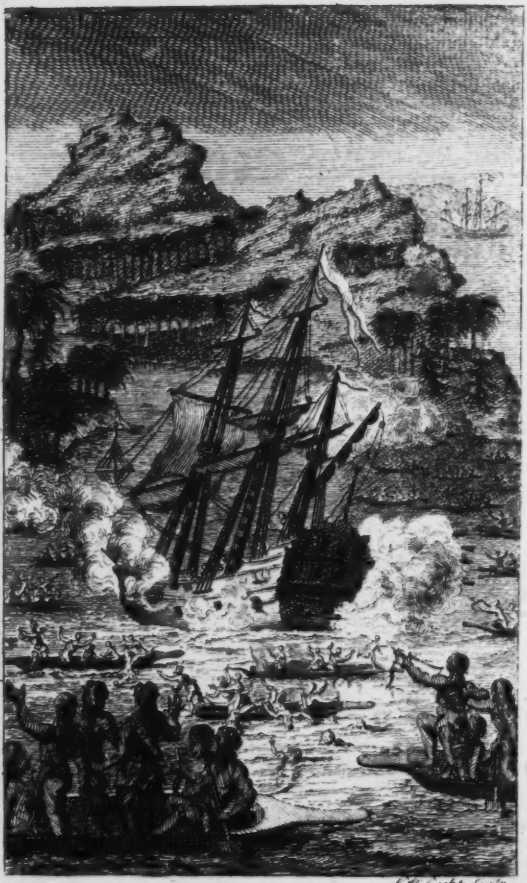

P. de Gucht Sculp

THE VOYAGES AND ADVENTURES OF *Captain* ROBERT BOYLE,

In ſeveral PARTS of the WORLD.

Intermix'd with the

STORY of Mrs. *VILLARS*, an *Engliſh* Lady with whom he made his ſurprizing Eſcape from *Barbary:*

The HISTORY of an *Italian* Captive; and the LIFE of *Don Pedro Aquilio*, &c.

Full of various and amazing Turns of Fortune.

To which is added, *The* Voyage, Shipwreck, *and* Miraculous Preſervation *of*

RICHARD CASTELMAN, *Gent.*

With a Deſcription of the City of *Philadelphia*, and the Country of *Penſylvania.*

The THIRD EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for J. WATTS; and Sold by J. OSBORN, at the *Golden-Ball* in *Paternoſter-Row.*

MDCCXXXV.

C 526 V

To the Right Honourable

Sir WILLIAM YONGE,

One of the Lords of the Treaſury, and Knight of the moſt Honourable Order of the BATH.

SIR,

THE *Great* and *Noble* of all Ages, *have*, and ever *will* be marked out by Writers of every Degree to patronize their Labours: And as Publick Fame (though ſparing of her Favours) has diſtinguiſh'd You in an Age of *Politeneſs*, *Wit*, and *Learning*, among other eminent Vir-

tues that exalt the Mind, and dignify Human Nature; I am ſufficiently juſtify'd to the World in the Choice of my Patron: But muſt depend on your known Candour, for thus preſuming, without your Leave. Yet I have this for my Excuſe, Exalted Merit is free to the Conſideration of all Men, and where Excellencies ſhine, every Man has a Right to admire.

Though Praiſe is the juſt Due of Merit, and all the World would join with me while I grew warm in yours, yet as I know your Nature more enclin'd to *deſerve* than *receive* it, I ſhall eaſe You of that Pain, and in Silence wonder, where Words muſt fail.

The People of *Mexico*, every Year, offer'd ſomething to their *Emperor* in Token of *Vaſſalage*; and frequently,

frequently, among Things worthy the Notice of a *King*, he receiv'd even Sacks of common Earth, from thoſe Perſons who could not afford a nobler Offering: But *they*, like *me*, did what was in their Power, with an Expreſſion in their Language, which ſignified, *I would it were more worthy of your Acceptance.* I am aſſur'd from your Goodneſs to find Pardon for this Freedom, though I add to my Preſumption, by ſubſcribing my ſelf,

Your moſt Obedient,

Humble Servant.

THE PREFACE.

THE following Sheets are a Detail of Fortunes I have run through for many Years; and however extraordinary they may appear, I ſhall give you the Circumſtances for Truth. Yet this I muſt own, they lay by me undigeſted, and I had never any Intention to make 'em publick, if an old Acquaintance had not taken my looſe Papers from me, and declar'd, if I would not digeſt 'em, he would.

The Shipwreck of my Friend Mr. Caſtelman, *the Dangers he underwent, together with the Deſcriptions of* Penſylvania, *and* Philadelphia *the Capital of that Country, I hope will not diſpleaſe the Reader. There are no Embelliſhments, nor one Step out of the Road of Truth. I believe every one that knows him, will give him the Character of a Perſon of the greateſt Probity; as the Poſt he is in will ſufficiently teſtify.*

THE

THE ADVENTURES OF Captain *Robert Boyle*, &c.

I WAS born at a Sea-Port call'd *Boſton* in *Lincoln-ſhire*. My Father was Captain and Owner of a Merchant-Ship that traded to the *Weſt-Indies*, but was caſt away homeward bound upon the Rocks of *Silly*, and but one Man ſav'd of his whole Crew. My Mother and I were at an Aunt's in *London* when the unhappy News of my Father's Death arriv'd.

I was too young to feel my Loſs; but my Mother's Grief ſoon broke her Heart, and left me a poor helpleſs Orphan not ten Years of Age. It's true, I had a tender Aunt that was in pretty good Circumſtances, who took Care of my Education. I ſoon learnt to read, and write a good Hand; I underſtood a little *Latin*, and was perfect Maſter of the *French* Tongue, which I

had been learning from my Infancy: my Mother being born at *Paris*, where my Father marry'd her very young, and brought her to reſide at *Boſton*.

By that time I had reach'd Fourteen Years of Age, my Aunt told me it was Time for me to think of ſome Trade, deſiring me to chuſe what I lik'd beſt, and ſhe would provide for me accordingly. Said ſhe, If I might adviſe you, I would have you ſtudy the *Law*, under the Tuition of your Uncle ——; But I told her I did not much care for any Calling that muſt owe its Proſperity to the Misfortune of others. And at laſt I choſe that of a Watchmaker, as imagining my ſelf to have a good mechanical Head. Accordingly I went upon Liking (as they call it) and my Maſter and I agreeing very well, I was bound with the uſual Forms, and found civil Uſage from him, in reſpect of my Birth and the Misfortunes of our Family.

My Aunt paid Forty Guineas (which was reckon'd, at that Time, a great Price; but he was one of the Top of his Buſineſs) and beſides to find me in Cloaths and other Neceſſaries, during my Seven Years Apprenticeſhip.

The firſt Half Year we agreed very well; but within that Time my Maſter had married a Wife of a pretty good Fortune, and a large Share of Ill-nature. In a Month's time ſhe began to tyrannize over my Maſter, as well as me, and ſoon prov'd, as the Saying is, *The grey Mare to be the better Horſe*. She brought it to that Paſs at laſt, that I was obliged to go on all her half-penny Errands, and carry her Book to Church of a *Sunday* after her. I bore this tolerably well, but not without complaining to my Aunt, who adviſ'd me to make my ſelf as eaſy as I could, for ſhe fear'd Speaking would do no good.

I went on this Way for a whole Year, and then to compleat my Misfortunes, my poor Aunt died of

a

a Dropſy. This indeed was the greateſt Shock of all my Life; for while ſhe liv'd I felt no want of Father or Mother. She left me 800 *l.* and my Uncle ——— to be my Guardian. I ſhall forbear mentioning his Name, not out of Regard to him, but of his Children, who have prov'd a ſweet Grafting from a ſour Stock, and as good as he was baſe.

My Shrew of a Miſtreſs continu'd her Ill-nature to me, and one Accident made her prove outragious.

My Maſter had a vaſt Trade, and vented a great many Watches beyond Sea. One Day he had a large Parcel of them to go on Board a Ship bound for *Lisbon*; the Veſſel lay at *Deptford*, and my Maſter was pleas'd to take me along with him in the Boat.

Before we were got to *Limehouſe*, my Maſter call'd to Mind that he had forgot a Silver Watch that he had purpoſely made for the Captain of the Ship. He landed me at *Ratcliff-Croſs*, and deſir'd I would be expeditious in going (for the Tide running downwards I could get to the *Exchange* ſooner on Foot than by Water againſt the Stream) then to take Boat at *Billingſgate*, and follow him to the Ship.

I ran almoſt all the Way, and I believe got to the *Exchange* in half an Hour. When I came home, I found no Body in the Shop but my Fellow-Prentice, who inform'd me my Miſtreſs was above. I went immediately up Stairs for the Watch (for my Maſter told me he had left it in his own Room, being he had wore it ſeveral Days to prove the going of it) but found the Door ſhut. Standing a Moment to conſider, I heard a Man's Voice ſpeaking to my Miſtreſs, in a low Key, and I ſoon underſtood by their Dialogue that Love was the Subject they talk'd of. I liſten'd ſome Time, till I found they had left off Diſcourſing, and were enter'd upon Action.

Now at the Head of the Stairs the Maid had left a Step-Ladder, that she had us'd in the Morning, in nailing up some Vallens to the Windows in the Dining Room, and there being a Glass over the Chamber Door, I had a great Mind to see who it was that was doing my Master's Business in his Absence. Thereupon I fixt the Ladder very softly against the Wainscot by the Door, and up I got; but leaning towards the Window in order to see into the Room, my Weight made the Ladder slip, and the Top sliding against the Door burst it open, and in fell I into the Room, Ladder and all, with no little Noise.

The loving Couple were mightily surpriz'd you may be sure, and were in such a Fright that they had forgot what they were a doing. But I saw enough to convince me that my Master was in a fair way to get to Heaven purely upon my Mistress's Account.

After our Surprize was over, and every thing put in Order again between the Gentleman and Madam, I ventur'd to tell her my Errand. She gave me the Watch with a hearty good Box on the Ear, and told me she wonder'd how I had the Assurance to come up without Knocking; but, added she, I believe you rather came upon some knavish Design, and had intended to rob your Master, if I had not been in the Room with my Physician, that came on purpose to see how I did.

It was plain enough what Physic she was taking, yet I made my Excuse to her that I went to remove the Ladder, and it fell out of my Hand against the Door and burst it open; but I told her I was sorry I had disturb'd her, made my Honours and walk'd off, taking no Notice that I had seen any Thing. I took Water at *Billingsgate*, and follow'd my Master.

In the Boat I began to ruminate with my self, whether I had best keep this Accident a Secret, or disclose it to my Master. At last, with many Pro's and Con's with

with my ſelf, I reſolv'd to acquaint him with it; partly to be reveng'd on my Miſtreſs for the Blow ſhe ſtruck me, and on the other ſide not to let my honeſt Maſter be kept in Ignorance of her Uſage of him.

When I came on Board, the Captain commanded me (with my Maſter's leave) to ſit down at Table with 'em. We din'd heartily, the Wine and Punch went merrily round, and my Maſter, the Captain, with two more that were Paſſengers, began to be in high Mirth; when Word was brought that the Captain's Lady (as the Meſſenger call'd her) would be on Board in an Hour to take her Leave of him. My Maſter upon this Meſſage began to be merry with the Captain; I wonder, ſaid he, that you Seafaring Men will venture upon Wives. Why ſo? reply'd the Captain. Why ſo! return'd my Maſter, Becauſe in my Opinion it ſhould put you in Mind of *Cuckold's-Point* as you went by Water: Your Abſence gives 'em ſuch a Conveniency, that I believe few let ſlip the Opportunity. Why, anſwer'd the Captain, mayn't your Wife, even now, be doing you the Favour; has ſhe not Time enough, d'ye imagine? The Thing's ſoon done; and if they have an Inclination, Watching and Reſtraint will do no Good: Many an Alderman has been cornuted while upon *Change*; and I knew a Parſon's Wife that ſeldom went to Church, but took Time by the Forelock, and while the Husband (good Man) was taking Care of his Flock, the good Woman at Home was at her Occupation with her Gallant, a rich young Farmer. But the Parſon one Afternoon being taken ſuddenly ill with a Giddineſs in his Head, was convey'd Home before he had begun his Work, and there ſoon found the Occaſion of his Pain; for he had been breeding Horns, as Children breed Teeth, a little unkindly. But however, the Parſon having Witneſſes enough of his Promotion in the Herd of Cuckolds, went to Law with the Farmer, and reco-

ver'd 500 *l.* Damages; and yet he has been heard often to ſay, that his Wife's Tenement was never the worſe.

This Story occaſion'd ſome others much to the ſame Purpoſe: At laſt my Maſter and I, (the Tide being turn'd,) took our Leaves of the Company, and wiſh'd 'em a good Voyage. Coming by *Cuckold's-Point*, my Maſter cry'd, *Robin*, why don't you pull off your Hat to the Gentleman in the Window yonder? I pull'd off my Hat very orderly, but ſaw no Body; at which my Maſter fell into a great Fit of Laughter, and cry'd I had been very courteous to the Horns. I then, underſtanding his Meaning, told him, that it was only for marry'd Men to ſhew their Complaiſance that way; and, being a little piqu'd at the Affront I thought put upon me, ſaid I believ'd moſt marry'd Men were, or would be in the Liſt of Cuckolds. Why, how now, Sirrah! reply'd my Maſter, d'ye think I am, or ſhall be a Cuckold? Why truly, ſaid I, Sir, I have but little Reaſon to believe my Miſtreſs a Saint more than any other Woman; and to inform you farther of what I have ſeen to Day, I beg you would be pleas'd to go to ſome Publick Houſe, that we may not be obſerved by the Watermen. My Maſter's Colour began to change upon this; and being very impatient to be inform'd of what I knew, order'd the Waterman to land at *Ratcliff-Croſs*, and wait a while.

We went to the *Ship* Tavern and had a private Room, where I declar'd to him the whole Truth. After many Queſtions and Anſwers between us, I ſoon found he believed all that I told him, for he turn'd as pale as Aſhes, and the Tears ſtood in his Eyes. I then was ſorry I had diſclos'd it to him, remembring the inimitable *Shakeſpear*,

He that is robb'd, not wanting what is ſtole,
Let him not know't, and he's not robb'd at all.

After

After ſome Time being ſilent, my Maſter broke into many extravagant Words, and threatning Actions; and at laſt I ventur'd to tell him, I thought him in the wrong to grieve at what could not be called back, and I wonder'd the World ſhould unjuſtly caſt upon the Man the Ignominy which was properly due to the Woman for her Licentiouſneſs.

After ſome Time he began to be more calm, and made me this Compliment; *Robin*, ſaid he, I have obſerved in thee a more than common Underſtanding. Pr'ythee tell me in what Manner I ſhall behave my ſelf in this Affair. I thank you, Sir, ſaid I, for your good Opinion of me, and, were it my own Caſe, I would not take any Notice of it till I found her in the Fact, or ſuch Circumſtances that even ſhe her ſelf could not deny; and for theſe two Reaſons, 1. Whenever it comes to an open Rupture you'll have but an uneaſy Living; and 2. that ſhe may take it into her Head to deny it, and then the whole Weight of her Anger will fall upon me; and truly, ſaid I, I have too much of her Ill-nature already to bear any more with any manner of Patience.

My Maſter reſolved to follow my Counſel, and intended to make his Wife believe he knew nothing of the Matter.

My Maſter could not imagine who this Gallant ſhould be, by my Deſcription, for I had never ſeen him before. We went to our Boat, and ſo Home. When we came in, my Miſtreſs ask'd my Maſter if *Robin*, meaning me, had been telling him any Stories. Stories, Child! anſwer'd my Maſter, what Stories? he has told me nothing. Nay, no great matter, ſaid my Miſtreſs, but I gave him a Box on the Ear this Morning, when he came back for the Watch you had forgot, and I did not know but he had made ſome Complaint; but I am ſorry for it, and will make him Amends one

Time or other. This ſhe ſaid ſo loud that I might hear.

The next Day when my Maſter was gone to *Change*, ſhe came up into the Work-houſe, as we call'd it, up three Pair of Stairs, and took an Occaſion of ſending my Fellow-Prentice on ſome concerted Errand. When he was gone out ſhe ſat down upon his Chair, and look'd me in the Face for ſome time. Well *Robin*, ſaid ſhe, I am very much oblig'd to you, that you did not take any Notice of the Accident that happen'd Yeſterday to your Maſter; and to make you Amends for your Silence I give you this Broad Piece to buy you a Pair of Gloves, with this Promiſe, that you and I will never diſagree again. I receiv'd her Money, and told her I ſhould never take any farther Notice of it. She call'd me good Lad, and left me.

My Maſter had not always an Opportunity of talking with me at home, ſo he appointed me every *Sunday* after Sermon in the Evening at ſome Tavern or other, that we might talk about the matter. At our firſt Meeting I told him the Story of the Broad Piece, and the Diſcourſe my Miſtreſs and I had together. I ſhew'd him the Money, and he ſoon knew the Piece to be his Wife's from the particular Fairneſs of it, being the ſame he had ſome time ago given her for a Pocket-Piece.

Now, ſaid he, *Robin*, I am fully convinc'd of the Infidelity of my Wife; for notwithſtanding your former Story, I had ſome faint Hopes it might have been a Tale of thine, rais'd out of Malice to thy Miſtreſs, from her indifferent Uſage of thee.

But now to find out this Spark, that I may wreak my Vengeance on him firſt; for, to own my Folly, *Robin*, I muſt tell thee I can't find I ſhall ever be able to hate this ungrateful Woman. Some time after, my Maſter was pretty well convinc'd that his Wife had been with her

her Spark to the *Mulberry-Garden*, and my Maſter had diſcovered who he was; he prov'd to be a young Attorney of *Clifford's-Inn*. The next Thing we conſulted about at our weekly Meeting was how to give 'em an Opportunity of purſuing their Amour at Home. In Order to this, my Maſter gave out to my Miſtreſs that he ſhould be oblig'd to go as far as St. *Margaret's* in *Kent*, to look after ſome Goods, that were landed there in order to avoid paying Cuſtom for them, and he fear'd the Affair would not be ſo well manag'd if he was not preſent.

The *Tueſday* following was choſe for the Day of his ſetting out. My Maſter gave me publick Orders to go to ſeveral Places in his Abſence, to look after the Workmen (for there are ſeveral Trades belonging to the making of a Watch). On *Tueſday* Morning my Maſter got on Horſeback, in Order (as my Miſtreſs and the reſt of the Family thought) to purſue his Journey: But he went no farther than *Iſlington*, and return'd, putting up his Horſe again; and went ſtrait to the Place of our Rendezvous.

As ſoon as my Maſter was gone, my Miſtreſs call'd me up to her, and ask'd me if I had Time to ſtep a little Way for her. I told her 'twas impoſſible, being I had ſome Work to finiſh that I was oblig'd to carry out immediately. Then ſhe begg'd I would call her a Porter, which I did, and one of my particular Acquaintance, one well to paſs in the World; for a City Porter in thoſe Days was a very beneficial Employment, there being then no Penny-Poſt-Office. I told him what he ſhould do, that he muſt go to my Miſtreſs and receive the Letter, and then to an adjacent Ale-houſe, and wait till I came to him. Accordingly he receiv'd the Letter, and went to the Place I appointed. I did not let him wait long, but order'd my Matters as if I was going about my Maſter's Buſineſs, and went to the

Porter. From thence I took him along with me to my Maſter, where we open'd the Letter, and found it as follows; —— " Dear *Tom*, it's an Age ſince laſt I " ſaw you; the Cuckold's gone out of Town for a " Week, therefore meet me at the Old Place by Six " this Evening." Here we were at a Stand, for we could not imagine where the *Old Place* was, unleſs the *Mulberry Garden*. At laſt we reſolv'd to ſend the Porter to the Spark, and bring the Anſwer to us, to ſee if that would give us more Light in the Affair. Accordingly he went, and return'd with his Billet; we made bold to open it, and found it contain'd theſe Words, — " My Life, I don't think the old Place con- " venient, being a Brother Lawyer has diſcovered ſome- " thing of our Intrigue; therefore I'll wait on you " before the Time, that we may concert Meaſures ac- " cordingly. I am glad your Beaſt is out of Town; " we'll add another Antler to adorn his Brow, aſſoon " as I have the Happineſs to ſee her who ſhall eter- " nally command yours. ——

When my Maſter perceiv'd that the Scene was to be open'd at his own Houſe, he began to demur: But after keeping Silence a little Time, he ſpoke to me to this purpoſe. *Robin*, this Letter has in ſome ſort confounded our Deſign, for what I intend to act, I would not, if it could be avoided, put in Execution at home, for fear it ſhould make too much Noiſe; for, added he ſmiling, tho' a Man has the Misfortune to be a Cuckold, yet he would not have all the World know it. I told him I was glad to ſee him ſo merry upon the Occaſion, but begg'd he would not keep the Porter any longer, for fear of ſome Accident. He thank'd me for my Care, ſeal'd up the Letter again, and ſent him away with it. When the Porter was gone, my Maſter order'd me to go home again, and obſerve how Matters went there, and as ſoon as ever the Spark came,

to ſend the ſame Porter back to him with this Notice, *That the Work was ready to carry home, whenever I thought fit.*

I had not been at home a quarter of an Hour ere my Gentleman came in a Coach; he went up Stairs, but did not ſtay a Moment, came down again, whiſper'd the Coachman, and drove into *Cheapſide*. I was at a loſs how to behave my ſelf, but my Miſtreſs order'd another Coach to be call'd. When I found that, I ſent for the Porter, and told him ſecretly that he muſt dog that Coach let it go where it would, and be expeditious in bringing me Word. My Miſtreſs came down in her Hood and Mask in her Hand, and went off in the Coach. I look'd after her as far as I could ſee her, and obſerv'd the Porter to jump up behind the Coach. I immediately went to my Maſter, and acquainted him with the Buſineſs. He hurried me home again, for fear the Porter ſhould wait for me, and order'd me to bring him, when he came, to the *Pope's-Head* Tavern, becauſe he would be nearer home.

The Porter did not return in two Hours: He told me that the Coach drove to *York* Stairs in *York* Buildings, and there they got out and took a Pair of Oars; he went in another, and follow'd 'em till they landed at *Lambeth*, and dog'd them into the *White-Lyon* Inn. There he ſtaid ſome time, to ſee if they intended to go from thence; he walk'd into the Kitchen and drank a Mug of Ale, and in a little time one of the Waiters came in, and told the Cook the Gentleman and his Wife had beſpoke a roaſted Fowl and ſome Fiſh for their Dinner, and had ordered clean Sheets to be put to air, for as ſoon as they had din'd they deſign'd to go to Bed, being the Stage Coach was to call them up at One the next Morning.

I did not think it altogether ſo proper to take the Porter to the *Pope's-Head* to my Maſter, but went alone,

alone, where I found him with another Gentleman, a Stranger to me. When I had given him an Account, we took Coach all together and drove to the Horſe-Ferry, *Weſtminſter*, took Boat and landed at *Lambeth*. We all went into the *White-Lyon* the back Way, and I went to the Drawer (as we had before concerted) and ask'd if there was not a Gentleman and a Lady that did deſign to lie there all Night to wait for a Stage Coach in the Morning; he anſwer'd in the Affirmative, but added they were that moment gone to Bed, that they might be the better able to riſe in the Morning. I ask'd him which Room they lay in, for that I had Buſineſs of great Conſequence to communicate to him. Why that Room up one Pair of Stairs, anſwer'd the Drawer, and pointed at the Door. Well, ſaid I, fetch me a Pint of Wine, I'll drink a Glaſs, and then go and wait on them.

The Drawer ran down for the Wine, and in the mean time I beckon'd my Maſter; up Stairs we went, I ſet my Foot againſt the Door, burſt it open, and there we ſoon perceiv'd the loving Couple playing at *Rantum Scantum*. I ſhut to the Door again, and ſtood Guard that no One ſhould enter. My Maſter laid faſt hold of my naked Gentleman, and with the Aſſiſtance of his Friend threw him upon his Back, clapt a Piſtol to his Breaſt, and ſwore he would ſhoot him if he offer'd to ſtir or cry out. Then my Maſter's Friend took out a Box of Inſtruments, and, with a Pair of Sciſſars for that purpoſe, ſoon depriv'd him of what *Seneſino* and ſeveral *Italian* Singers want, as well as our Spark. The Thing was done ſo ſuddenly, that I believe my Gentleman hardly knew his Loſs till he felt the Blood trickle about his Legs. He made ſeveral Attempts to get up, but to no purpoſe. My Maſter told him he had better be quiet, for fear he ſhould be worſe ſerv'd, (but in my Opinion that could hardly be.) The Surgeon

geon (for it prov'd my Maſter's Friend was no other,) had all his Implements about him; he manag'd his Needle, his Plaiſters, and Salves, and finiſh'd my Gentleman, and would have had him gone home ſomething lighter than he came, but he prov'd ſo weak with Loſs of Blood and the Pain together, that he fainted away.

My Miſtreſs had hid herſelf behind the Curtain, and did not ſo much as ſay one Word; but in all her Concern ſhe took Care to dreſs her ſelf, and when ſhe had done ſhe ſat upon the Bedſide next the Wall, and ſeem'd to be in deep Diſcontent.

We had got my Gentleman to himſelf again by the help of the Drawer, who ſoon found how Matters went. When we had done, my Maſter ſaid to his Wife, Madam, I muſt confeſs I was to blame to diſturb you in your Diverſion, but I own my Fault, and will endeavour to mend it by leaving you together to ſolace your ſelves, and ſo I take my Leave.

Upon this we march'd down Stairs, paid for our Wine, and went to our Boat that waited for us, and landed at the *Steel-yard*. My Maſter was very uneaſy all the Way home, and we could not get one Word out of him. He went up Stairs, lock'd himſelf in his Room, and remain'd alone ſeveral Hours. I would have been willing to have diverted his Melancholy, but did not well know how I ſhould go about it.

Near ſeven a Clock in the Evening he call'd me up Stairs, and ask'd me if I had heard any thing of his Wife. I told him no. Nay, ſaid he, if ſhe has any Shame left, ſhe will hardly attempt to come home again in haſte. After ſome time he went out, and did not come home again till twelve a Clock. He ask'd me ſtill after my Miſtreſs, and underſtanding we had no News of her, went to Bed.

The next Morning he order'd me to ſend the Porter to *Lambeth*, to learn how they behav'd themſelves when we

we had left 'em. He return'd, and told my Maſter that the Gentlewoman went away as ſoon as ſhe found we were gone, and left the Gentleman there, who was ſo weak that he remain'd there ſtill, and had ſent for ſeveral of his Acquaintance.

In the Afternoon my Miſtreſs's Mother came to my Maſter, and they had a long Diſcourſe, and afterwards went out together. But I was never more ſurpriz'd in my Life, when he came home the ſame Evening with his Wife and Mother. He vouchſaf'd to tell me the next Day that his Wife reſolv'd never to be guilty of any Fault again, and by her Submiſſion and the Intreaties of her Mother, he had reſolv'd to take her home once more. Sir, ſaid I, if you can forgive her, no one elſe has any thing to do with it. But, added I, I fear I ſhall feel the Effects of her Diſpleaſure. No, anſwer'd my Maſter, that was one of my Conditions with your Miſtreſs, that ſhe ſhould take no Notice to you of paſt Tranſactions. And truly ſhe kept her Word, for ſhe would not ſo much as look at me.

She continu'd very reſerv'd for a great while, and never went out but to Church of a *Sunday*.

In the latter End of the ſame Year my Maſter began to be out of Order, and the Phyſician adviſ'd him to go into the Country for the Air; and accordingly he took Lodgings at *Hampſtead*, where my Miſtreſs us'd to go twice or thrice every Week to ſee him; and my Maſter told me (when I went of a *Sunday* to wait upon him, to give him an Account of the Buſineſs of the Shop) that his Wife had been ſo tender of him in his Illneſs, that he verily believed he ſhould never have any Occaſion to blame her Conduct again. I told him I was as well pleas'd as he was.

About a Week afterwards my Miſtreſs went in and out very often, and ſeem'd to be very buſy, giving Orders

Orders to my Fellow-Prentice for taking her a Place in the *Hampſtead* Coach as uſual. This happen'd on the *Tueſday*, and I ſaw her no more that Week.

When I went to my Maſter on the *Sunday* following, he ask'd me if my Miſtreſs was out of Order, being he had not ſeen her ſince the *Monday* laſt. Nor I ſince *Tueſday*, ſaid I, but I thought ſhe had been with you, for ſhe took a Place in the Coach in order to come to you that Day, and ſent out ſeveral Bundles to be carry'd; as ſhe uſually did when ſhe was coming to wait on you.

My Maſter was ſo confounded with what I told him, that he did not offer to ſpeak for ſome time, and the Sweat ran down his Face like Drops of Rain. At laſt, ſaid he, *Robin*, I fear all is not well! My Wife has certainly undone me. Come, hope for the beſt, ſaid I.

Well, my Maſter reſolv'd, weak as he was, to go for *London* immediately. We took a Coach, and ſoon got home; and there to our great Sorrow found my Miſtreſs had robb'd my Maſter to the Value of Five Thouſand Pound in *Bank* Notes and Money, with Six and Thirty Gold Watches and Seventeen Silver Ones, beſides her own wearing Cloaths. My Maſter at this Loſs ſunk down upon his Bed. I went and fetch'd ſome of his Neighbours and Friends to comfort him, while I ran up and down like a Madman, to ſee if I could get any Tidings of the Thief.

I went to give Orders at the *Bank* to ſtop Payment, but to my great Sorrow found the Money had been receiv'd four Days before. I came back to acquaint my Maſter with my ill Succeſs, and found him alone and gone to Bed. When I told him I could not hear any Tidings of my Miſtreſs, and that the Money had been receiv'd, he cry'd, *Robin*, it is not the Money that grieves me, but the ill Uſage of my Wife; 'tis that

that has got to my Heart, and never to be remov'd till Death. I ſat up with him a great while, till he told me he began to be ſleepy, and ordered me to retire; but as I was going from him, he took me by the Hand, and bid me good Night. I found by his Pulſe that he was in a Fever, and begg'd I might call a Phyſician; but he ſaid he ſhould be better on the Morning, if not he would ſend for one. Finding him willing to reſt, I left him and went to Bed.

As ſoon as I wak'd in the Morning, I put on my Gown, and went to ſee how he did; but found him ſo weak and faint that he had not Strength enough to lift up his Head. I was immediately running to fetch a Phyſician that liv'd hard by our Houſe, but my Maſter call'd me back, and told me it was too late, for, ſaid he, I feel my laſt Moment approaching. He order'd me to ſit upon the Bed by him, he took my Hand in his, which burnt like Fire, and ſaid, *Robin*, my Wife has kill'd me; I could have born any other Misfortune with Temper; if thou ever ſhould'ſt ſee her, tell her from me that I forgive her, and that I beg ſhe would reform her Life; but alſo let her know that ſhe was the Death of me. I told him I would not have him talk of Dying for an ungrateful Woman that did not deſerve the leaſt Regard, but to chear up his Spirits and let me go for a Phyſician. No, ſaid he, all Phyſic or Counſel comes too late;

I've that within which baffles all their Art,
Sure Means to make the Soul and Body part,
A burning Fever and a broken Heart.

He had no ſooner repeated thoſe Lines but his Speech fail'd him, his Eyes clos'd, and he expir'd only with a Sigh.

I muſt

I muſt confeſs I was inwardly ſhock'd, and the Spirit of Revenge roſe in my Soul againſt the barbarous Cauſe of his End.

When I had a little recollected my ſcattered Thoughts, I went to a Couſin of my Maſter's that liv'd in *Cheapſide*, and deſir'd he would come and take Care of his Affairs. For my own Part I could not compoſe my ſelf for two or three Days: At laſt I went to my Uncle, and deſir'd he would let me have Twenty Pounds to buy me Mourning, (for I did intend to wear Black, that my melancholy Outſide might conform with what I felt within) out of Reſpect to my Maſter's Memory. Mourning, *Bob!* anſwer'd my Uncle, Why if thy Maſter's Friends won't give it thee, 'tis my Opinion thou ought'ſt not to think on't. Yes, Sir, added I, I think it my Duty; for tho' my Miſtreſs us'd me ill, my Maſter always was civil to me. But my Uncle told me in plain Terms that I ſhould not have a Farthing. I told him I wanted but my own; but he reply'd, when he thought I was of Years enough to manage my Money my ſelf, perhaps I might be truſted with it, but at preſent he would take Care of it for me.

I was very uneaſy at this Affair, for it began to look as if he intended to cheat me of it, and I did not ſtick to tell him my Sentiments in a civil manner, but to no purpoſe. I left him with a very heavy Heart, and came home. I went to Bed in the utmoſt Confuſion of Thought; yet notwithſtanding my Diſcontent, ſlept 'till Morning. I got up about ſix a clock, with a ſcurvy Idea of my future Fortune. About eight, my Uncle's Man brought me a Letter from him, in which he begg'd my Pardon, and told me it was only to try my Temper. The Man gave me ten Guineas by his Order, and farther told me that his Taylor would be with me immediately to take my Directions; and accordingly

accordingly before the Fellow was gone he came, took Meaſure of me, and told me he would be ſure to bring my Cloaths home by twelve a-clock the next Day; and he kept his Word with me.

In the mean time I had provided my ſelf with every Thing elſe with the Money my Uncle had ſent me; and the ſame Evening waited on him to return him Thanks. *Bob*, ſaid he, I had only a Mind to try your Temper, and I find thou art Father's own Child, a Chip of the old Block.

He would have me ſtay to ſup with him, and among other Diſcourſe he ask'd me what I did intend to do now my Maſter was dead, for he did not ſuppoſe I was Maſter of my Trade enough to follow it. I reply'd, I knew enough to recommend my ſelf to any other Maſter without paying any more Money. My Uncle reply'd, I needed not be in ſuch haſte, but take ſome Time to conſider of it, and in the mean while I ſhould live with him and be heartily welcome. And to make his Actions agree with his Words, he gave me five Guineas more for Pocket-Money, and gave Directions for me to be with one of his Clerks, a good-natured young Fellow, that was a School-fellow of mine.

I was very glad of the Occaſion, living with my Uncle in great Tranquillity the ſpace of a Month, and all the time he ſeem'd to be very fond of me, never denying me any thing that I ask'd him.

One *Sunday* Morning before Church-time he call'd me to him, and (after many Profeſſions of Friendſhip) ask'd me if I had never done any Buſineſs for my Maſter out of the Watch-making Trade. I pretty well gueſs'd at what he meant, and anſwer'd him in the Affirmative. Very well, ſaid he, I muſt ſend you as far as *Graveſend* to morrow about the ſame Affair; and if I executed my Commiſſion dextrouſly, he told me it ſhould be the better for me.

The

The next Morning I got up, and my Uncle ſent me with a Letter into *Pall Mall* to a Client of his, and returning with an Anſwer, found him taking his Leave of a Gentleman that look'd like a Sea-Officer. As ſoon as their Compliments were over, my Uncle diſpatch'd me away to *Billingſgate*, and gave me Inſtructions what to do. I was to enquire for a Ship call'd the *Succeſs*, Capt. *Stokes* Commander, at *Graveſend*, and then to follow his Directions.

As I was talking with my Uncle, my Bed-fellow thruſt a Book into my Pocket, and told me that would divert me in the Boat, if I had not Company that I lik'd. I did not much regard what he ſaid, but went about my Buſineſs, got into the *Graveſend* Boat which put off upon the Inſtant, and had the Fortune to light of good Company, and one young Man that was going to the ſame Ship as I was.

We were very merry all the Way with little Stories we told among our ſelves. We got on Board the *Succeſs* about two a-clock in the Afternoon, and the firſt Perſon I ſaw was the ſame Man that I found with my Uncle in the Morning. He took me by the Hand, and carry'd me into the Cabin, and ſet a Piece of Ship Beef before me. When I had din'd, he inform'd me my Things would be on Board immediately. I told him it was very well; not ſuſpecting any thing. Afterwards the Captain went out, and left me alone in the Cabin: I got up, and looking out of the Cabin Window, found the Ship was under Sail. At firſt I began to be ſurpriz'd, but yet was ſo ignorant that I thought we were ſailing up the River. While I was ruminating on the Matter, the Captain came and told me my Things were ready for me, whenever I wou'd. I went out; but how was I ſurpriz'd when I ſaw my Trunk that I left at my Uncle's with all my Cloaths in it! I was in ſuch Confuſion that I had not Power to utter

one

one Word for ſome time. At laſt, recovering out of my Surprize, I ask'd him the Meaning of what I ſaw! Meaning, Child! reply'd the Captain: Why, what's the Matter? would you go ſuch a Voyage as we are upon without Neceſſaries? What Voyage? return'd I. Why, to *Virginia*, reply'd the Captain. At that Anſwer I ſat me down upon my Cheſt and burſt into Tears, and had ſuch a Combat in my Mind that bereav'd me of the Power even of Thinking for ſome time. The Captain indeed did all he could to comfort me: At laſt I fancy'd it might be only a Jeſt; but to my Sorrow found by all their Diſcourſe it was but too much in earneſt.

The Captain declar'd that my Uncle had bargain'd with him for my Paſſage, and that I was to be deliver'd to a Relation I had in *Charles Town*, upon the Continent of *America*. I ask'd the Name, but he told me one that I had never heard of before.

When I found I was certainly betray'd by my barbarous Uncle, I fell upon my Knees, and begg'd the Captain to put me on Shore, and I would find ſome Means to pay the Sum he was to have for my Paſſage. He anſwer'd, he was too well paid already to let me go on Shore again; and further added, I had nothing to do but to make my ſelf eaſy, for I was not likely to ſet my Foot in *Europe*, till I had firſt ſeen *America*.

I found it was to no purpoſe to intreat any further: It is true I had no Averſion for the Sea, but rather an Inclination; and if my Uncle had made any Propoſals to me concerning ſuch a Voyage, and properly prepar'd, 'tis ten to one if I had not accepted it. But in this manner to be kidnapp'd, for it was no better, and then the Dread of being parted with as a Slave when I came thither, ſhock'd me prodigiouſly. But being naturally of an eaſy Temper, eight or ten Days pretty well wore off my Apprehenſions, and I began to

be

be contented with my wretched Fate. I ſet my ſelf with all my Diligence to learn the Mathematicks, as alſo the Work of a Sailor, and quickly attain'd to ſome Knowledge. I ſoon ingratiated my ſelf with moſt of the Crew, who inſtructed me in all they knew.

I mention'd a Book my Uncle's Clerk put in my Pocket, as I left the Chambers that Morning I was trepann'd, which for the firſt three or four Days I did not remember; but putting my Hand in my Pocket to feel for ſomething elſe, I took it out, and found in it a Letter directed for me, which was as follows:

Dear Bob,

When you went to St. James's *this Morning*, [ſuppoſing I would have read it the Day I receiv'd it] *I overheard my Maſter diſcourſing with a Captain of a Ship, and I learnt that he intends to ſend you to* Virginia. *I could not underſtand the Particulars, but enough to know the Bargain is made. My Friendſhip to you, and the Barbarity of your Uncle obliges me to give you this (I hope) timely Notice. I ſhall leave the Management to you; but whatever Steps you take, I am not to be in the Queſtion: and I thought of this way to acquaint you with it, fearing I ſhould not have the Opportunity of ſpeaking to you. Farewell till I ſee you again, which I hope in God will not be long.*

A. M.

This Letter made me curſe my Fate again: for if I had had the good Fortune to have read it before I was on Ship-board, I might have prevented my Uncle's Deſign: But it was my Deſtiny, and therefore I ſubmitted to it.

We met with nothing in our Voyage till we came near the *Canaries:* When one Evening we heard ſeveral Cannons fir'd, as we ſuppos'd two Leagues from us.

Our

Our Captain alter'd his Courſe, in order to avoid a Rencounter with an Enemy; for our Ship carry'd but ten Guns and twenty Men, beſides Paſſengers. But notwithſtanding the Captain's Care, as ſoon as ever the Morning dawn'd and the Fog was clear'd up, we found our ſelves within half a Mile of a Rover of *Barbary*. We were all mightily ſurpriz'd, for the Gally made up to us with Sails and Oars, being to Windward of us. Our Captain advis'd us to ſurrender immediately, but the Sailors were for fighting, and were confirm'd in their Opinion upon Sight of another Veſſel bearing down upon us, whom they knew to be *Spaniſh* by her Colours. All our Guns were immediately brought to the Starboard Side, and every Body ready to engage, Paſſengers and all who were willing to preſerve their Liberty.

The Rover by this time was juſt upon the Starboard Bow, and prepar'd to board us. We had ſome Hand Granadoes on board, with ſeveral other Stores for our Fort at *Charles-Town*, and a Gunner as one of our Paſſengers. He ordered ſeveral Men into our Main-Top with Granadoes, and follow'd himſelf, and as ſoon as ever the Gally came near enough, our Men at the Helm bore away, and fir'd our Guns upon him, which rak'd 'em fore and aft, and did much Execution. Our Gunner above in the Top threw in upon them with his Granadoes, which we could perceive put them into much Confuſion. But all this would not have avail'd, if they had not perceiv'd the *Spaniſh* Man of War bearing upon us. They did not make any farther Attempts to board us, but they fir'd their Cannon and gall'd us with their ſmall Arms.

I had gotten a Muſket on board and had diſcharg'd it as I thought, for it flaſh'd in the Pan, and the Noiſe of the other Pieces deceiv'd me. I charg'd again, but then found by the Rammer that my Piece had not gone off.

off. However I was reſolv'd to fire it: I ſtood upon the larboard Gunnel juſt upon the Forecaſtle, to be as far from the Enemy as I could, and fir'd my Piece; but being double charg'd, and a ſtubborn Jade, gave me ſuch a Bang that threw me over the Side of our Ship; my Foot hung in the Fore Change for ſome time, but ſtruggling (with my Head downwards) to raiſe my ſelf up, my Foot diſentangled, and I fell plum into the Sea.

Altho' I had learnt to ſwim in *England*, yet the Fright, the Smoke and all together took away my Underſtanding, and I found by my Struggling that I had got within ten Yards of the Rover, and ſhe that Inſtant bearing away before the Wind, they did me the Favour to ſtun me with a Stroke of one of their Oars, and took me on board them.

They row'd with all their Strength, and the Wind being in their Stern, they inſenſibly left the *Succeſs*, who flatted their Sails and laid by till the *Spaniſh* Ship came up with her, and then we could perceive 'em both making after the Rover.

The Captain of the Corſair was an *Iriſh Renegado*, and as ſoon as he was out of Danger, he ſent for me into the Cabin, and ask'd me ſeveral Queſtions concerning our Ship, where ſhe was bound, and who I was, (for he took me for more than a common Sailor, being I was not in a Sailor's Habit.) I told him my Story, as I have related in the foregoing Sheets. He ſhook his Head, and, with a Smile, ſaid I was very ready at a Lie. Sir, ſaid I, I am ſo far from lying, that I jump'd overboard on purpoſe to come to your Veſſel rather than to ſtay with them, chuſing to be a Slave nearer home, than to go I don't know where with the Knave that trepann'd me: And to convince your Honour of the Truth (for I *honour'd* him much) here's the Letter which my Uncle's Clerk ſlipp'd into my

my Pocket in a Book, (for by good Fortune I had the Letter and Book in my Pocket when I fell overboard.) At reading the Letter he was convinc'd, he ſaid, of my Sincerity; and thou ſhalt ſee, added he, notwithſtanding the bad Opinion is held of us *Renegado's*, that you ſhall fare the better for your Confidence in us. Sir, return'd I, this Accident may convince you that I thought very well of your Honour, for as ſoon as I ſaw your Honour upon Deck giving Command, I thought you had the Look of a Gentleman; (tho' by the By he had a damn'd *Tyburn* Face.)

I clarkt him up ſo well (with *your Honour*) that he began to fancy himſelf a Hero indeed. He order'd my Chains to be taken off, (for they had done me the Favour to provide me ſome aſſoon as ever they had got me on board) and told me that if I would turn *Mahometan* I ſhould have Command under him. I anſwer'd him, I hop'd he would give me ſome Time to conſider of it. Ay, ay, Time, thou ſhalt have half a Year's Time to conſider of it, return'd the Captain. He carry'd me out upon Deck, and told my Story to his Crew, who were mightily pleas'd with the Relation, and ſaluted me after the *Mooriſh* manner, by bowing their Heads, and clapping their Hands acroſs upon their Breaſts.

There were ſeveral other *Engliſh Renegado's* that were Officers in the Galley, but moſt of the common Sailors were natural *Moors*. The Captain told me that he did deſign to make for *Sallee* with all the Expedition he could, for he had engag'd with a *Spaniſh* Man of War the Night before, and had ſuffer'd very much in both his Veſſel and Crew: but he told me he would ſoon be out again, for he had another Veſſel ready in *Sallee* Road to put out to Sea. We had before Night loſt Sight of the *Succeſs*, and *Spaniſh* Man of War, that had ſo luckily freed her from the Infidels Clutches; and we ſteer'd for *Sallee*.

Ten

Ten Days after we diſcover'd the *African* Shore, within five Leagues Weſt of *Sallee* Road; and the Wind favouring us, we anchor'd in the Harbour by Six in the Evening. The Captain went aſhore, but ordered me to remain on Board till the next Day.

I muſt confeſs I began to have ſome Hopes of ſeeing my own Country again, but yet did not know how to bring it about; however, I reſolv'd to truſt Providence.

The next Morning my Maſter ſent for me on Shore, by a young *Renegado* Sailor born at *London*, whoſe Chriſtian Name I learnt was *Francis Corbet*, but had exchang'd it for *Muſtapha*; a good intelligent young Fellow, and one that was a perfect Maſter of the Mathematicks. The Reaſon why he did not accompany the Captain in this Voyage, was a violent Fever when he ſet Sail. I ask'd him why he could forget the Saviour of the World to turn *Mahometan*; he told me that he was only one from the Teeth outward, and he thought it better to truſt God with his Soul, than thoſe barbarous Wretches with his Body. I thought it was a pretty free Declaration to one that was an utter Stranger to him.

As ſoon as we were landed, I had the whole Town of *Sallee* ſtaring at me; for the Captain of the Rover had taken Care to ſpread my Story among 'em; and I had as much Reſpect ſhown me by the People of the Town as he had. He took me home to his own Houſe, and us'd me with much Civility for a Week or ten Days; during that time he had carry'd me twice or thrice to his Country Houſe, about ſix Miles up the River. It was a very pleaſant Place, ſituated in a little Wood, with the River running round it, and no approaching to it but over a Draw-bridge. At this Houſe his Wives liv'd, for I was inform'd he had ſeveral.

Obſerving his Garden, I told him it was but indifferently kept. He anſwer'd it was for want of a Gardener, none of his Slaves underſtanding that Art. I offer'd him my Service, but told him I did not pretend to be a Gardener, but I was aſſur'd I could ſoon make Amendment to it, with the Help of ſome of his Servants. He order'd me to take as many as I thought fit, and, added he, becauſe I am impatient to ſee it in a better condition, I'll leave you here. I told him I begg'd to be excus'd now, becauſe I ſhould want ſeveral Things for my Deſigns. If it be Tools, ſaid he, or Seeds of all Sorts, I have 'em here. Upon which he carry'd me into a little Houſe, meant for a Greenhouſe, where I found every Thing that was wanting, with a large Quantity of *European* Seeds and Roots. I told him I was ſatisfy'd there was every thing that I ſhould want. The Captain order'd me a Bed to be made in the Green-houſe, and an old Eunuch, that underſtood *French* very well, to wait on me, with a ſtrict Order that I ſhould have every Thing I ask'd for, but I was not to approach the Houſe in his Abſence upon any Account. I told him I had no Curioſity that way, and did not doubt but I ſhould ſhow him ſomething that would pleaſe him the next time he came, which was to be in 20 Days.

As ſoon as he was gone I went to Work, (for Gardening was what I always took delight in, both Theoric and Practic.)

I drew out Plans, order'd my Workmen, and in ſix Days time brought it into ſome Form. I perceiv'd in the middle of the Garden a Puddle of Water, which I gave Directions to be drain'd, and found that it had been formerly a Fountain, but was only choak'd up with Filth by Neglect. I ask'd the old Eunuch if he had ever known it to play, and he anſwer'd in the negative, neither did they imagine it to be any ſuch thing: for

for his Maſter had bought the Eſtate of an old *Spaniſh* Renegado four Years before, and he told him it had been a Fiſh-Pond. I examin'd about the River, and found the Head of the Pipes ſtopp'd with Rubbiſh, which I clear'd, and by degrees the Water work'd thro' into the Fountain, and out again thro' another Conveyance. I obſerv'd that there had been Figures upon it, by the Pipes; I ask'd my Eunuch if he had ever ſeen any ſuch things: He told me there were ſeveral lying in a back Yard on the other Side the Houſe. I went with him, and found four ſmall Figures of *Tritons*, and a *Neptune* in his Chariot drawn by Sea-Horſes. I order'd them to be brought to the Fountain, and fixt them on, (firſt ſtopping the Water) and then letting it looſe again finiſh'd my Fountain, which plaid admirably out of the Shells of the *Tritons*, (which they ſeem'd to blow with) from the Noſtrils of the Horſes, and the Trident of the *Neptune*. The Workmen were aſtoniſh'd to ſee with what Expedition I had compleated it, and imagin'd I had dealt with the Devil. The next Morning the Eunuch came to me before I was up, and deſir'd I'd give him the Key of my Chamber, and be contented to be a Priſoner till he came to me again. I was a little ſurpriz'd, and ask'd him the Reaſon: He told me he could not give me any, being it was beyond his Commiſſion. Accordingly he lock'd me in, and went away. I began to ruminate about this Accident, but could not imagine the Cauſe: I had no Way to look out towards the Garden, being the Windows of the Green-houſe look'd over the River into the Wood, and the Back which fronted the Houſe had only painted Windows for Ornament, not Uſe. In about two Hours my Eunuch came and releas'd me, and we din'd together. I us'd all the Rhetoric I was Maſter of to find out the Secret, but to no Purpoſe; he only added that I muſt be in the ſame Condition

again the next Morning. This was ſtill more ſurpriz-ing, and I began to think by Degrees I ſhould entirely loſe my Liberty. The old Eunuch imagining my Thoughts, aſſur'd me there was no harm meant to me. This Afternoon was my laſt Day's Work, and in three Days more I expected the Captain. About an Hour before Night I perceiv'd another Eunuch of the Houſe talking earneſtly with him that us'd to attend me, who immediately came to me, and told me he muſt beg me to retire to my Chamber that Inſtant; upon which I readily obey'd, knowing it was to no purpoſe to con-tend.

I was upon the Tenters to know the Reaſon of my Confinement: Whilſt I was employing my Thoughts about it, I heard the Voices of Women. It ſurpriz'd me at firſt, but I ſoon found that was the Reaſon of my being made a Priſoner. When the Eunuch came to bring me my Supper, I told him he need not have made ſuch a Secret of what I was lock'd up for, for I had found it out; and then told him that I had heard Women's Voices in the Garden. Did you? (ſaid he, ſurpriz'd) I'll take Care they ſhall keep their Tongues within their Teeth for the future. He ſaid no more, but immediately went out, and ſoon return'd, and told me I ſhould hear no more of them. I was confound-ed with this odd Proceeding, and my Curioſity began to be more and more rais'd.

When I was left alone, I began to examine my Room where I was, to ſee if I could find ever a Peep-hole, and by good Fortune found one made by Time and ill Weather under the Pent-houſe. I upon the in-ſtant of my Diſcovering made all the Uſe I could of it, and ſoon perceiv'd three Women in the Walk with their Backs towards me. They were in a *Turkiſh* Un-dreſs, with their Necks bare: One of them above the reſt ſeem'd to me to have a better Shape and Air than commonly

commonly the Women of *Morocco* have. I don't know what came over me, but I ſeem'd impatiently to expect their nearer Approach. At laſt my Deſires were anſwer'd; for aſſoon as they had ſpent ſome Time at my new Fountain, they directed their Steps towards my Confinement, and when they were near enough, I could diſtinguiſh them to be three handſome Women; but one of 'em that ſeem'd to be very melancholy, ſurpaſs'd the other two, at leaſt in my Opinion. She ſeem'd to be about twenty, fair to a Miracle, and much like an *Engliſh woman*. She did not ſeem to converſe with the other two, but follow'd them with an Air of Contemplation; and I could obſerve her ſigh often. I never till this Moment had the leaſt Regard to any of the Female Sex, no more than good Manners and Decency requir'd; but I found my ſelf in a Moment full of aching Tenderneſs for this ſtrange Woman. Though I had no time for Thought till the Ladies were retir'd, I then began to reaſon with my ſelf, and found Love like Deſtiny was not to be avoided; and the more I thought, the more I was plung'd in this tormenting, yet pleaſing Paſſion. Yet I thought it was very odd to fall in Love, conſidering my Circumſtances. I had nothing to hope, and all to fear: I was poor, a Priſoner, and a Stranger, far from my native Country, in want even of Neceſſaries, and, to compleat my Miſery, ſunk in one Hour an Age in Love. Every new Thought ſeem'd a Thorn to torment me; yet notwithſtanding all theſe Difficulties, a Beam of Hope would now and then ſhine thro' the thick Clouds of Deſpair, and encourage me to love on. From this Thought I began to think with Reaſon (if a Lover can be call'd a reaſonable Creature) how I ſhould manage my Paſſion. I began to reflect the *Moors* were jealous of their Women even to a Degree, and did not in the leaſt doubt but my *Iriſh Renegado* had learnt that Part of

their Manners. At laſt I pitch'd upon an odd Expedient: I determin'd to ſhew to my Captain an utter Deteſtation of all Females, (and in truth the Uſage my poor Maſter met with from his Wife, very much leſſen'd the Regard I ow'd the Sex) and try what that would do. This Thought ſeem'd to give me ſome Satisfaction, and aſſoon as the Eunuch came to releaſe me, I begg'd he would ſup with me that Evening. He accordingly promis'd me, and came immediately with my Supper, and brought under his Garment a Bottle of excellent *Greek* Wine. I muſt confeſs I was ſurpriz'd and pleas'd; for as I knew the *Moors* are reſtrain'd from Wine, I did not expect any there. The Eunuch to'd me, ſmiling, that he had brought that Cordial to make me Amends for the Loſs of my Liberty; for though, added he, *Muſſulmen* are not allow'd to drink Wine, we very well know you *Europeans* ſeldom eat without it: and our Maſter (meaning the Captain) is not ſo ſtrict a *Muſſulman* but he drinks much himſelf, and procures privately great Quantities for his own Uſe. I told him, I thought *Mahomet* order'd his Followers to abſtain from Wine, becauſe an immoderate Uſe of it generally turn'd to immoderate Paſſions; but to take it ſparingly gave Health and Vigour to the Body, and Chearfulneſs to the Spirits. He agreed with me in my Sentiments, and ſhow'd he approv'd of them by drinking to me. Notwithſtanding my Endeavours to hide the Trouble of my Spirit, my kind Eunuch took Notice of a Concern in my Countenance, and chear'd me up with repeated Glaſſes; and imagining my Confinement caus'd that Alteration, told me he would not have me take to Heart the ſmall Abridgment of my Liberty, for aſſoon as his Maſter arriv'd, I ſhould not be reſtrain'd any more; for the Cauſe would ceaſe, by the Confinement of the Ladies to their ſeveral Apartments. I told him, with a ſeeming Joy, that I ſhould be mightily

mightily pleas'd when that ſhould happen, for I abhorr'd the Sight of them; Women were my utter Averſion, and had been from my Infancy; and that Averſion was aggravated by the Knowledge of their Perfidy; and I thought it the greateſt Curſe could fall upon that noble Creature Man not to be born without them. Upon this I told him the Story of my Maſter and Miſtreſs, and ſeveral extravagant Tales of my own Invention, which painted that beautiful Part of the Creation in the Colour of the Devil. My Companion prais'd me for ſlighting the Sex, and back'd my Stories with as many of his own Knowledge. Between our familiar Talk and our *Greek* Wine, he began to be very loquacious: He told me, his Maſter, after the Mode of the *Moors*, had ſeveral Wives, beſide a Captive that he had lately taken, that ſeem'd averſe to his Paſſion, and all the Rhetorick he was Maſter of could not prevail. He did not know, he ſaid, what Country-woman ſhe was, but ſhe ſpoke very good *French*. I imagin'd this could be no other than that ſweet Creature I had ſeen: I chang'd Colour; but to put it off ſaid, A Pox take all the Sex, don't let's talk of them any more. I am afraid, ſaid he, you love to converſe with the Men, and that makes you ſlight the Women. I did not immediately underſtand him, but he ſoon explain'd upon it, and then I was no longer ignorant. I told him it was of ſuch a beaſtly Nature, that I was of Opinion thoſe Perſons that us'd it ſhould be treated worſe than Beaſts. Why, reply'd he, it is ſo common here that 'tis reckon'd only a Piece of Gallantry. Well, ſaid I, I hate that Action, even worſe if it be poſſible than the Sight of the Female Sex. The old Man and I parted like two Friends; but before he went, I told him he need not give himſelf any great Trouble to lock me in for the future, for I would take Care of my ſelf. Well, well, ſaid he, and ſhook his Head, I

believe I may truſt you. As ſoon as he was gone I went to Bed, not to Sleep, for I had Thoughts enough about me to keep me waking. I began to conceive a great deal of Hopes from my Diſſimulation. I ſpent the whole Night in thinking of a thouſand Expedients to forward my Deſigns, till I had thought of ſo many that they were all confus'd like a Skein of Silk pull'd the wrong way. At laſt with the Fatigue of Thought I fell aſleep till Sun riſing, nor awak'd till I heard Voices in the Garden. I ran immediately and barr'd my Door on the Inſide, for fear of being diſcovered at my Peep-hole, huddled on my Cloaths, and ran up; where I ſaw my lovely Charmer reading in a Book, walking by her ſelf in the Alley that led to my Priſon. The other Women were got about the Fountain, admiring the playing of the Water. She drew nearer me; but what was my pleaſing Surprize when I heard her repeat the following Lines in *Engliſh!*

——— *My Grief lies all within,*
And thoſe external manners of Laments
Are merely Shadows to the unſeen Grief
That ſwells with Silence in my tortur'd Soul.

I muſt confeſs, the Tranſports I felt were beyond Expreſſion: She had ſuch a Softneſs in her Voice, and yet ſo muſical, that it made my Blood thrill thro' my Veins. In ſhort, during the time I beheld her, I was in ſuch an Ecſtaſy, that all my Cares were forgot. She turn'd up the Walk again, but I follow'd her with my longing Eyes till ſhe was out of Sight: I then turn'd them into my Imagination, and there beheld her ſtill.

I was convinc'd ſhe was an *Engliſh* Woman, and kept in her Reſtraint againſt her Will. I ſoon reſolv'd with my ſelf to find ſome Expedient to let her know I would ſerve her all that lay in my Power, if ſhe was diſpos'd to accept of it.

I

I had ſtaid ſo long fixt at my Peep-hole, that the old Eunuch knock'd at my Door, which ſoon rouz'd me from my pleaſing Thoughts, and put me upon another Task, which was to diſſemble. I ſuffer'd him to knock twice or thrice before I let him in; at laſt I open'd the Door, when he had call'd to me to give me to know who it was: Aſſoon as he was enter'd, I began to exclaim againſt him in a friendly manner; ſaid I, You promis'd me Yeſterday that I ſhould not be troubled with the Tongues of thoſe Female Devils, and I have been ſo plagu'd with them for an Hour together, that I was oblig'd to ſhut my Door, and run up Stairs to be free from the Sound. He ſmiling told me, the Fumes of the Wine which he drank over-night had drove it out of his Thoughts, but he would be ſure to give them a Caution to hold their Tongues for the time to come: But then, added I, I may be ſurpriz'd by them when I little expect 'em. No, ſaid he, I'll take Care to ſend, or bring you Word when they are diſpos'd to walk in the Garden again. I thank'd him for his Caution. He told me he did deſign to come and dine with me that Day, for, added he, I ſhall not have another Opportunity a great while, for the Captain has ſent Word he'll be here to-morrow without fail. Accordingly he came with a roaſted Pheaſant, and ſome boil'd Rice, attended with another Bottle of *Greek* Wine.

Notwithſtanding my new Paſſion, I eat and drank heartily; but my Eunuch got almoſt tipſey, and the Fumes of the Wine getting up into his Head, he deſir'd he might repoſe himſelf on my Bed for a while, which I granted him; well knowing if he had been found out, we might both have ſuffer'd for taſting the Juice of the Grape. I had much rather he had gone within the Houſe to have ſlept, for I could not even think to the purpoſe while he was there: But he ſoon

got into a found Sleep, which I found out by his Snoreing. I then ventur'd to take Pen and Ink, and wrote the following Lines.

To the Engliſh Lady.

Madam,

I Have obſerv'd your melancholy Air, and other Circumſtances, ſpeak you a Priſoner here. The Perſon that writes this is your Countryman, and tho' in the ſame Diſtreſs, yet has a Heart and Hand to do you Service. I flatter my ſelf it will one Time or other be in my Power to effect our Liberty. If you have no Thoughts that way, I am perſuaded you have too much Generoſity to do one a Prejudice that would venture any thing to ſerve you. You know the Conſequence if this Note ſhould be diſcovered, therefore I beg you would deſtroy it aſſoon as you have perus'd it; and if you will favour me with an Anſwer, with your Sentiments of what I have wrote, you'll find a String hanging on the North Side of the Garden Houſe, to which if you fix your Letter, I ſhall be ready to prevent Diſcovery of what may hurt you, and him whom you may freely command.

I had not the Conveniency of Sealing-wax or Wafer, therefore I folded it up, and directed it *To the* ENGLISH LADY. When I had finiſh'd, I began to have odd and confus'd Notions of the Succeſs of it: Perhaps, ſaid I to my ſelf, ſhe may be contented with her Fortune, or be afraid to hazard any Attempt towards her Liberty: She may alſo imagine I am ſet on purpoſe to betray her, and therefore to ſhew her Innocency may diſcover me to the Captain. I was in a hundred Minds: Sometimes I reſolv'd to burn the Letter; but at laſt Love prevail'd upon all my Reaſons to the contrary, and I reſolv'd to try the Succeſs of it the firſt Opportunity. In

In reaſoning with my ſelf, and writing my Letter, I had ſpent three Hours, and therefore I thought it high time to awake my Eunuch, who ſtarted up frighted out of his Senſes. When he had recover'd himſelf, he thank'd me for breaking his Reſt, for he was aſſur'd he was wanted within. And he nick'd his Time to a hair, for before he was got half way the Walk (for I immediately got up to my Peep-hole) I ſaw the Ladies at the farther End. He talk'd to them ſome time, and then left them, to go into the Houſe.

They ſaunter'd about the Garden a good while, till at laſt two of them ſat down by the Fountain, and the *Engliſh* Lady continued her Walk towards my Apartment. Now my Blood ran its ſwift Courſe, and the whole Frame of my Body felt violent Emotions. I thought this was a fair Opportunity, and yet was fearful to make Uſe on't. But muſtring all my Spirits, I ventured, and when ſhe was within twenty Paces of the Green-houſe, I darted the Letter, and by good Fortune it fell in the Middle of the Gravel-Walk, ſo that it was almoſt impoſſible to miſs on't; but had it happened otherwiſe, I had time enough to run down and take it up before any one elſe could diſcover it. She continued her Walk, and when ſhe came at it, ſhe kick'd it with her Foot, once or twice, and at laſt took it up. She was reading in a Book, as ſhe was the Day before; I could perceive her open it, and ſpread the Note upon her Book, ſo that no one could tell but that ſhe was reading. It is not poſſible to expreſs the Anxiety I lay under all this while: But I began to be a little more compos'd, when I obſerved her tearing the Letter into very ſmall Pieces, and ſcattering them in ſeveral Places of the Garden. She had not walk'd far, but ſhe return'd, and view'd the Green houſe with a great deal of Regard, and, to my Imagination, wanted to come to the North Side of it, as mention'd in the

Note,

Note, yet ſeem'd fearful; often looking back, and not fully confirmed in her Reſolution, at laſt went unwillingly to the reſt of the Ladies. This gave me ſome Hopes that ſhe received the Letter kindly, and that I ſhould hear from her ſoon.

I obſerved ſhe ſat by the Fountain very intent upon her Book, which did not much pleaſe me. In about a quarter of an Hour, ſhe got up, and came towards the Green-houſe again. When I ſaw her coming, I ran down Stairs, and fix'd a Packthread to the top of the Window, for fear if ſhe ſhould take Courage, and come to that Side, not ſeeing the Packthread, ſhe might be ſtartled, and perſuade herſelf there was nothing in't. I had plac'd it, and got up to my Peep-hole before ſhe had reached the South Side. But coming cloſe to the Wall, I could not ſee her by reaſon the ſmallneſs of the Hole cut off my Sight. But in leſs than a Minute I diſcover'd her walking back again, and ſometimes turning to view the Place of my Retirement. Aſſoon as ſhe had got to the Top of the Walk, (for I had not Power to ſtir before) I went down, and pulling in the Packthread, found a Piece of Paper ty'd to it. I unty'd it with a great deal of Expectation and Impatience, and found theſe Words wrote with a Pencil, upon a clean Leaf of a Book (which I ſuppoſe ſhe had torn from that ſhe had been reading in.)

I Was much ſurpriſed when I peruſed a Note, I found in the Walk of the Garden, as believing it directed to me. I confeſs I am a Perſon in Diſtreſs, but know not how to take the Word of a Stranger, and one I never ſaw, who perhaps is no more than a Spy upon my Actions, and what the Note contained may be by Order of him who pretends to tyrannize over me, becauſe I am in his Power; and ſeeks this Way to find out my Inclination, for Pretences to uſe me worſe. Therefore I'll

I'll expect a farther Aſſurance in half an Hour from the ſame Place. And I'll take an Opportunity to convey my real Sentiments back again.

The Joy I felt at reading this Note cannot be expreſs'd in Words. I ſat me down and wrote the following Anſwer.

MAdam, to tell you the Motive to ſerve you, may convince you of my Sincerity, which I'll let alone till I have the Favour of ſpeaking to you, if ever I am ſo happy. You have heard, no doubt, of the Perſon that the Maſter of this Houſe brought from Sallee, *who is the ſame that is willing, and proud to ſerve you. By him that dy'd upon the Croſs for our Sins, I am ſincere in what I write to you; and if I cannot ſerve you, it will be the greateſt Grief can happen to one who ſhall ever be yours.*

R. B.

When I had wrote this I went to the uſual Place, and ſaw my Charmer very near me. I threw it down as before; ſhe readily took it up, and walk'd back again, tearing the Note when ſhe had read it, as ſhe did the former, and went into the Houſe. Juſt as ſhe was got within the Gate the other Eunuch came out (not my friend) Eunuch) and as he was walking along, I obſerved him picking up the Pieces of the torn Notes. If any one had obſerved my Countenance at this Action, they might have diſcovered the utmoſt Confuſion there. I thought we were certainly undone, and could not tell how to behave my ſelf. I ſometimes repented of the Affair, but yet I always found my Concern was more for her whom I lov'd, than for my ſelf. Aſſoon as he had pick'd up all he could find, he return'd, with my hearty Curſe, and Wiſhes that he might be

obliged

obliged to ſwallow them down his Throat for a Penance.

I don't know when I ſhould have recovered out of my Fit of Confuſion, if the Sight of my Bliſs had not done it. She went to the Fountain, ſat her down upon the Margin, and ſpent ſome time there, then roſe and made to my Apartment; ſhe took two or three Turns with a Book in her Hand, but at laſt went out of Sight, as before. I ſtaid till I ſaw her in the Walks again, and then run down, where I found another writ with Ink, as follows.

I Am convinc'd of your Sincerity, and ſhall wholly rely upon your Endeavours to help me. If we ſucceed, and get our Liberty, I have it in my Power to reward you when we arrive in England. *As we are two unhappy Perſons, I ſhould not be diſpleaſed to ſee the Man that I own an Obligation to, even in his Intention to ſerve me. I have Liberty enough, I mean as far as my Bounds, and am not over-cloſely watched. The Captain who took me Priſoner has hitherto us'd me very civilly, and is only Troubleſome when he tells me he loves me. I have kept him from being too violent, by ſhewing him a little Civility ſometimes, but how long he will continue within the Limits of Modeſty I can't tell. 'Tis that makes me dread his Preſence, and the ſooner I am out of his Power, the ſooner I ſhall breath the Air of Content, which is the Wiſh of*

Your humble Servant.

At the reading of this Paper, my Heart ran over with Contentment; and had it not been for the Fear of what would happen about the Pieces of the Letter that were pick'd up by the curſed Eunuch, I ſhould not have known how to have contain'd my Tranſports: but the Thought of that, like Water on a Fire, damp'd my

my Joy. I paſt my Time between Hopes and Fears, till my Eunuch came to ſup with me. I had torn my Letter into many Pieces, and had diſpos'd of all the Fragments that had any Writing on it, but two or three ſmall Bits that were vacant of Words lay under Feet. As ſoon as ever my Eunuch ſpy'd them, he pick'd them up, and ſaid, I did not do well to tread upon Paper; for, added he, if *Achmat* had ſeen you (meaning the other Eunuch) he would have been in a ſtrange Paſſion. He has chid the Lady that my Maſter brought home laſt, very ſeverely, for throwing Pieces of Paper about the Garden, well knowing it could be only ſhe that had don't, becauſe the reſt were all *Mahometans*, and know the Virtue of it. I ask'd the Reaſon of all this Buſtle, about a Thing we *Europeans* put to the moſt ſervile Uſes. He told me with ſome Intreaty at laſt, that all true *Muſſulmen* have a great deal of Regard for Bits of Paper, becauſe the Name of God, or their Prophet, may be wrote upon it; and they have a Tradition, that when they are called out of Purgatory at the Day of Judgment, to be Inhabitants of the ever-bleſſed Manſions, there will be no other Way to come to their Prophet *Mahomet*, but over a large red-hot Iron Grate, which they muſt walk over Barefoot. And therefore, upon the Inſtant as they are going to ſtep upon the Grate, all the Pieces of Paper they have pick'd up during their Reſidence in this World will run and place themſelves of their own accord under their Feet, ſo that they will be enabled to get to their Prophet without much Difficulty. This whimſical Story ſet my Heart at Reſt, and we ſup'd chearfully, emptied our Flask of Wine which held two Quarts, and took our Leaves. I went to Bed, and felt ſuch a Calm in my Mind, that I did not lie long awake, but continu'd ſleeping till ten a-clock the next Day. I was

ſurpriz'd,

ſurpriz'd, and vext I had reſted ſo long, when I conſider'd perhaps that I had loſt Sight of my Love. I dreſs'd my ſelf, and took a Walk in the Garden, finding the Coaſt clear as I thought. The Sun being pretty warm, I retir'd to a little Shade made by a few Lawrel Trees, but was much ſurpriz'd to find her that was ever in my Thoughts, ſitting under the Shade in a thoughtful Poſture. She turn'd her Head at the Noiſe I made in approaching her, and was running away. I pluck'd up (with much ado) Courage enough to ſpeak to her; Madam, ſaid I, I would not have you be under any Apprehenſion. If I had known you had been here, I would not have diſturb'd you. I will only inform you, that I am the Perſon that has vow'd to ſerve you to the utmoſt of my Power. Sir, anſwered ſhe, I am not at all diſpleas'd at this Interview which is merely Chance; on the contrary I am pleas'd to ſee the Perſon whom I once hope to be obliged to for my Liberty, and wiſh we could often meet, that we might conſult about the Means. Madam (anſwered I) if you'll condeſcend ſo far, I don't doubt but to find Opportunities enough. I told her of my Plot with the Eunuch, and I had ſome Hopes it might produce ſomething. She approv'd of my Deſign, and my Conduct hitherto. She added that ſhe would take hold of all Opportunities to walk in the Garden (where I had inform'd her I could ſee her without being ſeen) and ſo we parted for fear of being diſcover'd. She went into the Houſe, and I went back to my Dwelling, and in leſs than half an Hour the Captain arriv'd. He came to fetch me to Dinner, and told me I had work'd by Magick; or I could never have done what I did. He told me he thought himſelf much obliged to me, and that I ſhould find it. I anſwered him, I was convinced it was but my Duty to ſerve him with every thing in my Power, and that

if he pleas'd I would make farther Improvements. He made me a great many Compliments his way, and declared he would leave it to my better Judgment.

By this time Dinner was ready, and I was ordered to ſit down at Table with him, (for tho' he had turn'd *Mahometan*, yet he eat as we do in *Europe*, not on the Ground upon Carpets as the *Aſiatics* and *Africans* do.) We had our Dinner dreſſed after the *Engliſh* Faſhion, and we drank plentifully of his *Greek* Wine. He told me he had a Diſpenſation from the *Mufty* to drink Wine, and ſmil'd. I anſwered I believed the Crime was pardonable by *Mahomet*, if it was drank with Moderation. For my Part, I don't think (ſaid I) Religion conſiſts in Caſtigation and Penance; and I am convinc'd that an upright Man, let him be *Jew*, *Turk*, or Chriſtian, may find his Way to Heaven. We had ſeveral Diſcourſes at Dinner about Religion, but I ſoon diſcover'd the Captain knew very little of any; and I am of the Opinion there's very few of the *Renegado's* think of Religion: Their Motive to change is Eaſe and Intereſt. But this is a Digreſſion.

When Dinner was over, we walk'd in the Garden, and I ſhow'd the Captain what Improvements I had deſign'd to make. He approv'd of every thing I ſaid, and inform'd me that he had heard from *Mirza* the Eunuch my Abhorrence of Women. But he adviſ'd me to keep my Sentiments ſecret, for when you abjure (ſaid he) the *Mooriſh* Women will make you feel their Reſentments. But 'tis odd, continu'd he, that one of your Youth and Make ſhould take ſuch an Averſion to the Female Sex. I told him I had very good Reaſons for my Hatred, and even my Mother was odious to me, tho' ſhe brought me into the World. Well but, added the Captain, Time and a Fair Face may make great Alterations. I told him I was very well aſſured I ſhould carry my Reſentment to the Grave. I fancy

(ſaid

(said he) I have an *English* Woman, a Slave of mine, that I have lately taken, would make you change your Sentiments, if you saw her. Sir, answered I, I would be willing to stand the Tryal to convince you to the contrary, tho' I would as soon look upon a Serpent with my Will. Well, said he, I have not learnt the Strictness of the *Moors*, in keeping Women without being seen; or if I had, your Aversion to them would convince me I have not much to fear. He desired me to walk awhile in the Garden, and he would be with me again immediately. Upon this he left me, and went into the House, and return'd in five Minutes. Come, said he, I have order'd my Women to walk in the Garden, and you and I will abscond behind these Lawrels, where we may see them, and not be seen. We had not sat long, before we could perceive three Women coming towards us. The two first were very handsom, a little inclining to Fat, one seem'd to be about thirty, and the other twenty one according to my Guess, and not so fair as our *English* Women; but the third was she I look'd for. All my Circumspection could not avoid my feeling a sudden flow of my Blood rise into my Face, which my Captain observ'd. Well said he (when they were walk'd out of hearing) I have taken Notice of your Disorder, and perceive your real Aversion is unsurmountable, which I am not sorry for, being it will add to your Liberty. I have no Occasion to have you confin'd when they walk in the Garden, for I fancy (added he laughing) you'll shun 'em fast enough. Just, answer'd I, as I would a creeping Snake, unless it were to destroy 'em, and that the Regard I have for you would prevent. The last (said the Captain) is your Countrywoman, one that I took in a Ship (my last Voyage but one) bound for the Island of *Zant*. I lik'd her so well, that I refused her Ransom that amounted to five hundred Pounds, and her Charms have overcome me so much, that I would willingly

willingly enjoy her with her own Conſent, for Compulſion palls the Joy. I have given her twenty Days to conſider on't, and when that Time's expir'd, if ſhe will not conſent, I am reſolv'd to force her.

Lord (ſaid I in a ſeeming Paſſion) how can you take ſuch an extraordinary Trouble for a thing that does not deſerve the leaſt Regard. If the reſt of the World were of your Mind (ſaid my Captain) the Women would have but a ſcurvy Time on't. Now 'tis to me amazing (reply'd I) that Men ſhould take Pains, live hard, and run all Hazards, to come home, and ſpend all the Fruits of their Labour on ſuch Trifles, that perhaps have not the leaſt Tenderneſs for 'em, eſpecially in theſe hot Countries where Women are given to be amorous, and yet have but one Man to ſometimes a Dozen of them and more; when perhaps a dozen Men would hardly ſatisfy one Woman. Why (reply'd my Captain) that's the Reaſon they are ſo ſtrictly guarded, we pretty well know what they expect. Now, if I had not had this Averſion to Women (I return'd) I have a Secret without Witchcraft, to make a Woman doat upon a Man. How, ſaid the Captain, have you ſuch a Secret? if you'll let me know it, I will not only give you your Liberty, but amply reward you beſides. Sir, ſaid I, I thank you; but as for diſcloſing the Secret, it is what I never can do; yet 'tis in my Power to prepare you a chymical Liquid, which put into White-wine will do the Buſineſs, though it will take up a great deal of Time, and be very expenſive. As for the Expence, reply'd the Captain, I ſhan't value it. But in how long Time can it be done? Not under one hundred Days after Projection, anſwer'd I. Upon this he paus'd ſome Time; A hundred Days is a great while, yet I think 'tis better to wait for her Conſent than to force her. So far (ſaid I) I think you are in the right; and further (added I) you may continue her Affection, as long

long as you think fit, by now and then adding ſome of the chymical Drops into any Liquid ſhe ſhall drink, after ſhe has taken the firſt Preſcription.

The Captain ſeem'd mightily pleas'd with my Project, and ask'd me what the Charge would be? I anſwer'd, I fear'd it would be about two hundred Pounds in this Country, tho' it would be much cheaper in *England*, where the things that I ſhould want were eaſier to be had; but I told him I could not give a juſt Account of the Charge, till I ſaw the Prices of the Things I ſhou'd want. I told him I was afraid I ſhould find it a difficult thing to get a *Still*, for that was the firſt thing I ſhould want. He anſwer'd me, he did not queſtion but I ſhould eaſily procure every thing I wanted for Money, and he would take care I ſhould not ſtand in need of that. He farther told me that ſeveral *Jews* in *Salle* had all manner of Drugs, and he believ'd every thing elſe that I ſhould want. (For fear of the worſt) I told him, I ſhould not want my Drugs theſe fifty Days, tho' I ſhould want the *Still* immediately, and Liberty to go into the neighbouring Woods in the Night-time, being there were ſeveral Herbs that I muſt gather by Moon-light, and when the Moon was in its Full, in the Increaſe, or Decreaſe, according to the Nature of the Herb I wanted. He told me I ſhould have all the Liberty I required, no doubting I would make any wrong Uſe of it. I told him, to be more ſecure, he might ſend who he thought fit, to guard me. No, return'd he, I'll leave you to your ſelf. But you may take who you will with you of my Servants, if you want their Aſſiſtance. I told him I ſhould ſtand in need of ſome of 'em ſometimes. Well, ſaid he, you ſhall go up with me, and take what Money you have Occaſion for. So accordingly we went into a little Cloſet, where was a ſtrong Box, which he open'd, and took out two hundred and fifty *Spaniſh* Piſtoles.

Piſtoles; ſaid he, if there is not enough, you may have more. I told him I was aſſur'd there was too much. Well, ſaid he, we'll reckon after the Affair is over. And becauſe it will be ſo long about, I'll e'en take another cruiſing Voyage, that I may not think the Time tedious. I was very glad to hear him ſay ſo, becauſe I ſhould have the better Opportunity to work my Deſign. Tho' I diſſembled my Joy, and told him I ſhould be ſorry for that, for I ſhould often have ſomething or other to give the Woman he deſign'd me to work upon. Well (ſaid he) *Mirza* ſhall take your Directions. Upon ſaying this he call'd *Mirza* to us; *Mirza*, ſaid the Captain, you muſt obſerve this Perſon's Orders; whatever he commands you to do, you muſt obey with as much Exactneſs as if you were ſerving of me. This he told *Mirza* in the *Mooriſh* Tongue, but explain'd it to me in *Engliſh*. *Mirza* alſo told me in *French* the Commiſſion his Maſter had given him, and farther added, he hop'd I would often command him to viſit the Wine Cellar. I told him we would not want. I advis'd the Captain to let me go to Town, to enquire for the Still as ſoon as poſſible, and to be known to thoſe People that ſold the Drugs. Why if you will (reply'd the Captain) we'll go immediately; upon which I conſented. He ordered a Horſe to be ſadled for me, and I went into the Green-houſe to prepare my ſelf; and luckily for me I did, for I found a Note fixed to the String, which my fair Correſpondent had taken Opportunity of leaving, when ſhe walked in the Garden by the Captain's Order. The Contents were as follows.

SIR,

I *Take this Opportunity to acquaint you that the Tyrant Captain is arriv'd, and has given me twenty Days to conſent to his abominable Love. I hope you will believe*

believe me when I tell you it has almoſt taken away my Senſes. The Time I fear is too ſhort for us to effect our Liberty; and if we do not ſucceed before the fatal Day, I ſhall be the moſt miſerable Wretch the Earth contains. Let me hear from you, and if you can give me the leaſt Glimpſe of Hope to lull my Sorrows, fail not to chear the Heart of

Yours.

How lucky was it for me to find this Note! It might have fell into the Captain's Hands, and then we had been in a fine Condition. I had Time to write but a ſhort Anſwer, which I threw on the Ground, and pull'd in my String; it was this, *Hope every Thing: Write no more till to-morrow.* I lock'd my Door, and took the Key with me.

When we were on Horſe-back, our chief Diſcourſe was concerning Charms, Philtres, and Witchcraft. I convinc'd him there was not any ſuch thing in the World; and my Compound was the only thing that could do what was deſir'd. He ask'd me if I my ſelf had ever try'd the Experiment: I told him more than once; and related the following Tale to him off hand.

There liv'd in our Neighbourhood a rich old Man and very amorous, but deformed to the laſt Degree: He was round-ſhoulder'd, broad-fac'd, blear-eye'd, ſhort-noſed, and his Mouth as wide as his Face was broad: a pretty Object as one ſhou'd ſee. This old Gentleman fell in Love with a very pretty Woman, a Mercer's Daughter over-againſt him, but ſeem'd to be the very Off-ſpring of Pride, and nothing leſs than a Lord ſhou'd be her Husband, being well aſſur'd her Charms would conquer every one that look'd upon her. She could not bear the thoughts of the old Gentleman, and whenever he talk'd of his Paſſion treated him ſo ill that he was almoſt diſtracted. I went to viſit him one Day,

Day, as I often us'd to do, for before his Love-Fit he was wont to be very good Company, and would make as free with his Deformity as any Body elſe would do; but I found him now in ſuch a Condition that I began to pity him. I us'd all the Arguments I was capable of to bring him to Reaſon, but it was the ſame thing as to ſtem a Torrent. At laſt I call'd to Mind this Elixir, which I had never try'd before this Occaſion; I was pretty well convinc'd of its Virtue from what I ſaw it was compos'd of, though the chief Ingredient is calcin'd Gold.

This wonderful *Arcanum* was found out by an Uncle of mine that had ſtudied the Secrets of Nature ſixty Years. When he was dying he call'd me to him, and gave it me in Writing, with the moſt ſacred Conjuration that I ſhould never reveal it, nor cauſe it to be wrote till I thought my laſt Hour near, and to deſtroy that which he gave me in ten Days, for fear it ſhould be found by Accident, and that ten Days would be ſufficient to imprint it in my Memory; I give it into your Hands, ſaid my dying Uncle, becauſe I find thy Underſtanding exceeds thy Years, and thy Averſion for Women will never let thee make an ill Uſe of the valuable Secret; and further added, that the Charge would deter me from doing it upon any ſlight Occaſion. I took it from him with a ſacred Promiſe not to diſcloſe it, till on my Death-Bed; for if my Uncle had recover'd I muſt have deliver'd it up to him again: But he expir'd in half an Hour.

I ſo far pitied the old Gentleman (and alſo having a Deſire to try the Experiment) that I told him I had it in my Power to make the Lady as fond of him as Love could wiſh, if he would go to the Charge. He told me he did not value the Expence, but he had no Faith in Charms. I convinc'd him at laſt, went to work, and accompliſh'd my Affair. The Quantity I made

made would ſerve a hundred Years, and I had a Bottle in my Trunk when I was trepann'd aboard, which if you had had the good Fortune to have taken, would have ſav'd you Time, and Money.

When I had brought my old Gentleman a Bottle of my Stuff, he ſeem'd even then to have little Faith in it; but I bad him have Patience till the Tryal. All he had to do was to convey about forty Drops in a Glaſs of White-Wine faſting. That ſaid he to me, will be a difficult thing, for I know ſhe hates me, neither will ſhe ſtay in the Company where I am. However I told him I would do my Endeavour to find an Opportunity: So I order'd him to keep a ſmall Bottle in his Breeches Pocket, (for it muſt be warm'd naturally with the Heat of the Perſon's Body that is to give it.) And in two or three Days I prevail'd upon a Relation of mine to invite the Lady to drink Tea with her: I acquainted my old Lover that he ſhould come in as by Accident, and bring a Pint of White-Wine as a Taſte of a Parcel he was to diſpoſe of. Every Thing happen'd as deſir'd; the old Gentleman came in, and got an Opportunity of conveying ſome of the Drops into a Glaſs of Wine, and I had the Satisfaction of ſeeing her drink it. This paſs'd off, and we parted: But the poor Woman in leſs than ten Days was diſtractedly in Love with the old Gentleman, who took his Opportunity, enjoy'd her, and after deſpis'd her.

Now the Nature of this Elixir is, that if the Doſe is not renew'd every time the Moon is in the full, the Object belov'd will ſink into dull Indifference again.

My Captain told me he thought I might have made my Fortune by ſuch a Secret. I reply'd I had forgot to tell him that my Uncle made that one of his Articles, that I ſhould never ſell a Drop of it, and I aſſur'd him I would always keep my Promiſe.

Our

Our Story brought us to Town, and I was very much pleas'd, for I was both tir'd in inventing Lies to amuſe him, and riding after the *Mooriſh* manner, with one's Knees almoſt to one's Mouth; and there's no altering the Stirrups.

We alighted at the Captain's Houſe; he ſent about the Town, and in an Hour bought a compleat *Still*. He went with me to the Jew's that diſpos'd of Drugs, and by good Fortune, and a good Memory, I remembred the Names of a great many Sorts. I laid out ſome Money then, and told him I ſhould want a great many other Sorts, and larger Quantities. Of this Jew I borrow'd a Crucible (thro' the Captain's Intereſt) to melt the Gold, as I told him. The things were order'd immediately to the Country Houſe, the Captain deſir'd I would make no Delay, ſo I return'd, and got home juſt by Sun-ſet. I immediately ran to my Green-houſe to ſee if the Piece of Paper was there, but I found it was gone; this pleas'd me.

I went to Bed and roſe early in the Morning, and ſeem'd to be very buſy about the Garden. I ſent for my Eunuch out of the Houſe, and told him what I had undertaken for the Captain; but I farther added, if he did not now and then give me his Company, attended with a Bottle of the Juice of the Grape, I could not poſſibly go through with my Undertaking. He anſwer'd me, ſmiling, that he had Orders from his Maſter not to diſobey me in any thing. But, added I, I have a harder Task than all this, for I am compell'd to have ſome Diſcourſe with the Woman I am to work upon, to find out her Temper; for according to her Diſpoſition I am to add or diminiſh ſeveral of my Ingredients. Nothing could have prevail'd upon me, continu'd I, to have undertaken this hateful Task, but the Hopes I have of Liberty; for that is the Agreement between the Captain and me, if I ſucceed in my Deſign, which I am in no

doubt of. I ſhould be glad, return'd the Eunuch, you might meet with what you deſire, yet I ſhould be ſorry to loſe your good Company. I ſhall with ſome Regret, anſwer'd I, part with you; but Deſire of Liberty, and indeed of revenging my ſelf on my unkind Uncle, which is natural to us Mortals, will make me as expeditious as I can in my Work. I order'd him to let me have a Couple of Servants, to go with me into the Fields that Night, to carry the Herbs I ſhould gather; and he told me they ſhould attend me.

I now began to think of acquainting the Lady with ſome Part of my Deſign, and therefore wrote her a Note to this Effect.

Madam,

I Hope to have the Honour of converſing with you without Fear, and even with the Conſent of your Tyrant. I have laid a Scheme for our Liberty, that with the Bleſſing of God I hope will ſucceed. You'll ſmile when I tell you I am to underſtand natural Magic: But I ſhall think nothing difficult, if in the End I can ſerve one who may ever command

Yours.

In leſs than an Hour I ſaw the Ladies coming down the Walk: I ran immediately up to my Peep-hole, and obſerved the Miſtreſs of my Heart ſauntring the ſame Way ſhe us'd to go. Aſſoon as I had diſcover'd her in the Walks again, I ran down, and found a Note in the room of mine; (at firſt I was uneaſy, imagining ſhe had not taken mine away) which contain'd to this purpoſe.

I Am ſomething reviv'd at your ſhort Sentence I found upon the Ground Yeſterday. I learnt your going to Town with the Captain by a Diſcourſe between Achmat *and* Mirza; *for I underſtand the* Moriſco *Tongue enough*

enough to pick out the Senſe of what they ſay: Yet I had not ventur'd to write, for fear my Note ſhould have miſcarry'd, if I had not ſeen you talking to Mirza *out of my Window. Only conſider my Time is very ſhort, and if there is no other way to avoid the Captain, I muſt fly to Death as my only Refuge. Think of it, and Farewell. Let me have an Anſwer the ſooneſt, for Doubt and Expectation are but lingring Torments.*

I wrote her the following Anſwer.

Madam,

I'LL write to you no more, and beg the Favour you wou'd deſiſt from giving your ſelf any farther Trouble. I will have the Pleaſure of talking to you openly to-morrow, and let you into the whole Scheme I have laid for our Liberty. But let me beg you to be chearful, tho' reſerv'd in your Countenance when we meet, for fear we ſhould be obſerv'd.

She came to the old Place in an Hour after ſhe had brought the laſt, with another Note (as ſhe told me afterwards,) but reading mine, ſhe did not leave it behind her.

After my Eunuch and I had din'd, I went into the neighbouring Wood with two of the Captain's Slaves that were Blacks: I loaded them with Herbs of ſeveral Sorts, any thing I could lay my Hands on, and order'd them to carry 'em into the Garden. I had taken Care to tie every particular Herb with a String, ſo that there was no Danger of mixing: Theſe I hung in Bundles upon the Branches of ſeveral Trees in the Garden, and out we went again. In ſhort, I gather'd a good Horſe-load of different Sorts, and ſome I laid upon the Banks, and others I cover'd with Earth, that it look'd as if I was about Buſineſs. I could hardly forbear ſmiling ſome-

times when alone, notwithſtanding my Anxiety for the Succeſs of my Deſign, to think how ſoon I drew in the credulous Captain. Then I began to be in a thouſand Fears of his diſcovering my Intention to ſome of the *Mooriſh* Phyſicians, for tho' generally ignorant, yet they would ſoon have found I was but an Impoſtor.

While I was amidſt my Fears the Captain arriv'd, whoſe ſight gave me ſome Trouble. He came up to me, looking about him at what I had done; Why this looks like Work, ſaid he. Yes Sir, ſaid I, I am willing to begin, that I may make an End the ſooner: But Sir, I muſt intreat one Favour, that you would not impart the Secret to any one of your Family but *Mirza*, nor to no one elſe upon any Account whatſoever: If they ſeem inquiſitive, tell 'em I am only diſtilling ſome ſimple Waters for your Cloſet. I like your Advice, anſwer'd the Captain, and will be ſure to follow it: The Reaſon of my coming down now was to take my Leave of you, for I deſign to ſet Sail to-morrow Morning early, for I am inform'd of a rich Veſſel that will be in our Latitude in ten Days, from a Priſoner that's lately taken belonging to *Spain*: I can't tell how long I ſhall be out, but I hope by that time I come back, I ſhall find every thing in readineſs. Sir, I return'd, I don't fear but to accompliſh my Deſign before you come back. Well, ſaid he, do you think you ſhall want any Thing elſe? I told him, nothing but now and then a Gallon of Sea Water. Well, ſaid he, I ſhall leave *Muſtapha* behind me in Town, who ſhall obey you in whatever you ſhall command. Well, ſaid he, Farewell (and ſhook me by the Hand) I'll juſt go in and give 'em a freſh Charge concerning you, and then to Town again. I was very glad to hear him ſay ſo; and he was as good as his Word, for in half an hour he took Horſe: He ſhook his Hand at me as he went by me, and I heartily wiſh'd it might be the laſt Time we might

might see one another; not as I could complain of my Treatment, for he had us'd me very handsomely; and if it had not been in regard to the Business of my Love, I should not have wish'd him ill.

Mirza came to me, and told me his Master had given 'em so strict a Charge to observe my Directions, that if I had a mind to dispose of his Estate, 'twas his own Fault, for we must not disobey you. Yes, answer'd I, if ever you find me requiring any thing foreign to this Affair, I'll give you leave to deny me; but there's one thing I must command you since I have the Power, and that is to come and sup with me, and bring some of the Nectar along with you, for I am really fatigu'd with stooping and walking in the Sun when I gather'd those Herbs. Well, return'd *Mirza*, I believe I shall not find much Difficulty in obeying your Commands; and I have one Favour to beg of you, which is, that you will lay your Injunctions on *Achmat*, that he may partake. Said I, not to-day *Mirza*, another time with all my Heart. Nay, reply'd *Mirza*, it is not out of Love to *Achmat* that I desire it, but that he may be as deep in Sin as my self; for if he should ever discover me, I can't tell the Consequence. Well, return'd I, we'll find an Opportunity. The Hour of Supper being come, *Mirza* arriv'd with a couple of Flasks. We eat and drank so heartily, that *Mirza* was incapable of helping himself; but was so inebriated with Wine, that I began to repent of my plying him so fast. I was forc'd to drag him, and lay him on my Bed. But how to conceal it from *Achmat* was my greatest Care; for I did not doubt but he would be wanted; and accordingly it so fell out. For about twelve a-clock at Night he came, and knock'd at my Door. I was up, and thinking of my Design. I open'd the Door, and understood by his Signs, that he wanted *Mirza*. I let him know by Signs, that I had sent him

to gather me ſome Herbs by Moon-light. He was ſatisfy'd, and went back again. Now *Mirza* kept the Key of the Gate, ſo that my Story was feazable enough.

About four a-clock in the Morning *Mirza* wak'd, but frighted out of his Wits to find it Morning; tho' I ſoon compos'd him, by letting him underſtand how I had manag'd *Achmat*. He return'd me a thouſand Thanks, and told me, he ſhould never be able to make me amends. I ask'd him, how I ſhou'd order it to ſee this Woman, for I could not go to Work till I had convers'd with her: And yet by Heaven and Paradiſe (ſaid I) I ſhall be more concern'd at the Interview, than at any thing which ever happen'd to me; (and that was but Truth, for my Mind was perplex'd between Hope and Fear, Joy and Anxiety.) I pity you indeed, ſaid *Mirza*, and I wiſh I cou'd any way eaſe you of the Trouble. Well, ſaid I, then let her come alone into the Garden, as I am ſprinkling my Herbs by and by; for I think one Woman is enough to plague a Man. Oh (ſaid *Mirza*) all Men are not of your Mind. But I'll leave you, and hope to find you in better Humour, when I ſee you again.

I had order'd a Slave to bring me ſome Water, and a large Quantity of Salt, to mix with it, only to amuſe 'em. With this I ſprinkled the Herbs I had gather'd, and I was very buſy about nothing.

I ſaw preſently after the Idol of my Soul, and *Mirza* running before her. When he was near enough to me to be heard, he ſaid, I muſt beg you to excuſe my waiting on you for a little while; for my not being in the Houſe laſt Night, as uſual, has let my Buſineſs ſo encreaſe upon my Hands, that I muſt make uſe of all Opportunities to regain loſt Time. I told him, I would not be his Hindrance, but was very ſorry I could not have his Preſence upon this Occaſion; for I ſhould be in a very great Dilemma. He made me no Anſwer (being

(being the Lady was within hearing) but return'd into the Houſe.

Aſſoon as the Coaſt was clear, I accoſted her with a great deal of Temerity. Madam, ſaid I, the happy Time is come, that I may tell you, without Fear or Danger, how much you may command me. Sir, (return'd ſhe) I am convinc'd of your ſincere Deſire to ſerve me; and as I have wrote to you, in one of my Notes, if Heaven proſpers our Wiſhes, and we arrive ſafely in *England*, I hope it will be in my Power to reward you. Madam, (ſaid I) the Succeſs will amply reward me for all my Trouble; and as one Climate gave us Birth, it is my Duty to do all I can to ſerve you, if I had no other Motive. But if you pleaſe, let us conſult, now we have Time by the Forelock, how we ſhall order our Affairs. Sir, reply'd the Lady, I am convinc'd your Underſtanding wants not to be inſtructed; and if you pleaſe, I'll be rul'd by you in every thing. Madam, (ſaid I) have you any Objection to be diſguis'd in the Habit of a Man? for (added I) we may ſo accompliſh our Liberty with more eaſe. I have no Objection to it, anſwer'd the Lady; but how will you procure it? Pleaſe to leave that to me (I return'd) and in leſs than ten Days I hope we ſhall be out of Danger. I then inform'd her of the Scheme I had laid, which ſhe mightily approv'd; and told me ſhe thought my Underſtanding outwent my Years. I told her ſome Accidents in Life new edg'd our Thoughts, and if we ſucceeded, the Inſpiration came from her. I obſerv'd ſhe bluſh'd at my Diſcourſe, yet did not look as if ſhe took ill what I had ſaid. But I was much concern'd to ſee her change the Diſcourſe. I did not think it proper to declare my ſelf any further, hoping when I had effected her Liberty, Gratitude would befriend me in her Heart. I obſerv'd, by her Converſation, ſhe had a large ſhare of Underſtanding, and a happy turn of Wit.

In ſhort, this Interview had fix'd my Heart intirely here. I had ſeveral times thought of inquiring into her Fortune, and how ſhe was brought into her unhappy Slavery, but deſiſted, till we had more Leiſure. She told me, ſhe fear'd we ſhould make our Converſation too long; not ſaid ſhe (with a Look that ſhot through my Heart) as I am oppreſs'd with your Company, but for fear we may be obſerv'd. I told her, I believ'd we ſhould not have many more Opportunities; therefore I begg'd her to be ready in a few Days, to leave this hateful Place. She anſwered me, that ſhe would wait with ſome Impatience my Commands, and any Hour ſhould find her in Readineſs. She farther added, that ſhe wiſh'd ſhe might be as ready, and as willing, at her laſt Call. I begg'd her to caſt off all melancholy Thoughts, and truſt to Providence. Upon which we parted; with this her Anſwer, that ſhe was ever reſign'd to the Will of Heaven; and whatever ſhould happen, ſhe would do her Endeavour to make her ſelf eaſy, even if it was the Miſcarriage of our Deſign.

When ſhe was gone, I ſoon found the Sight of her encreas'd my Paſſion (if it was poſſible for Love like mine to ſuffer Augmentation.) But it was Love alone that work'd Miracles of old; it was Love that rous'd me from ſupine Slavery; for I muſt own once more, if it had not been for this fated Paſſion, I ſhould never have attempted any thing to regain my Liberty. But even my Love ſlumber'd now and then, that induſtrious Diligence might wake, and I was reſolv'd to put the Deſign in Execution with all the Expedition imaginable, for fear of Accidents. I went on amuſing the Houſe, with Variety of Works for my Preparation; and I was continually ordering the Slaves to Town, for one thing or other, to ſtrengthen their Opinion.

Mirza came to me ſoon after. At his Approach, I did my Endeavour to put on a Countenance with lit-

tle

tle ſatisfaction of Mind, but I am apt to believe I did it but aukwardly. For as the Face is the Index of the Mind, I am of Opinion, a Perſon of nice Judgment and Obſervation may diſcover a falſe Paſſion, with as much eaſe, as a Jeweller would diſtinguiſh the different Species of Stones (if we may call them ſo.) Well, ſaid *Mirza*, your fiery Tryal is over; but I perceive by your Countenance, your Chagrin would willingly wear off, if you'd but ſuffer it. Why truly, ſaid I, I have two different Paſſions ſtruggling in my Mind, that is, Joy and Grief. I am pleas'd to think I ſhall ſucceed in the Affair I have undertaken; and yet griev'd that I muſt be compell'd to ſuffer the Torment I endure to help the Operation. Conſider the Reward (reply'd *Mirza)* that is to follow. I chang'd the Diſcourſe, that I might not be put to the Trouble to ſpeak againſt my Conſcience any longer. I told him I ſhould be obliged to go to Town for Salt-water out of the Sea, and other Neceſſaries, that I ſhould ſtay for. Why, reply'd *Mirza*, you may ſend for Salt-water without being at the Trouble of going your ſelf. I told him I was obliged to go in Perſon, becauſe I was to take it out of the Sea, when the Sun was in a particular Altitude. Nay, return'd *Mirza*, I am only concern'd upon my own Account, for I have engag'd *Achmat* to dine with you to-day, with a great deal of Trouble. Well, return'd I, I will not diſappoint you. I'll ſtay one Day longer to oblige you. He return'd me many Thanks for my Condeſcenſion, and went into the Houſe to prepare Things accordingly.

All the while he was abſent, I was contriving my Scheme. When Dinner was ready, *Mirza* brought it in, accompany'd with *Achmat*. He had taken Care at ſeveral Times to bring Wine, and had plac'd it in a Vault in the Green-houſe. *Achmat* made his *Mooriſh* Honours, and we all ſat down. *Mirza* begg'd I would

call the Wine a Cordial, that the Captain had given me. But I might have call'd it what Name I would, for *Achmat* did not underſtand me; for *Mirza* was my Interpreter, and with much Perſuaſion we prevail'd upon him to taſte it. But when he had drank one Glaſs, he ſeem'd to like it mightily, and ſoon ask'd for another; and in ſhort, ply'd his Hand to his Head ſo often, that he was oblig'd to get up, and play'd ſuch Pranks, danc'd and ſung, and roll'd about, that it put us in a Fright, for fear ſome one ſhould hear the Noiſe he made. Which to remedy, I made him drink more, till at laſt he dropt down, and fell aſleep. We laid him upon my Bed, and did not intend to diſturb him.

I told *Mirza*, now we had accompliſh'd this great Affair, I had a mind to go to Town even then, for the Sun ſhone, and perhaps it might not the next Day, and I was willing to take the firſt favourable Opportunity. He told me, what I pleas'd, now the Jobb was done. Accordingly Horſes and Slaves were provided me, and away I went for *Sallee*. When I came to Town I found *Muſtapha* at home, who congratulated me with the Favour I had receiv'd fro his Maſter, and farther added, that he had given him full Charge to obey me in whatever I ſhould command. I told him I ſhould want his Aſſiſtance immediately with a ſmall Boat, only he and I, and I begg'd him to take his Quadrant with him, for I ſhould want his Art a little. We took the Boat he had provided me, and row'd out of the Bay till we came to a ſmall Promontory, where I deſir'd him to take the Elevation of the Pole, When he had ſo done, we lav'd Water into a Veſſel we brought for that purpoſe, and went home again. From thence I went to the Jew's, and begg'd he would furniſh me with a *Moriſco* Habit for my preſent Wear; for the People of the Country do ſo ſtare at me, ſaid I, being in a different Dreſs from them, that it makes me aſham'd.

aſham'd. He provided me with a very handſome one, which I had pack'd up carefully, that no one ſhould obſerve what it was. I bought ſeveral Trifles of him that I had no occaſion for, and at ſeveral Times other rich Habits; but one thing particularly that I hop'd I ſhould want, which was a Pint of liquid *Laudanum*.

I went to *Muſtapha*, and order'd my things to be got ready: While that was doing, I endeavour'd to ſound him to know whether he had any Thoughts about his Liberty, for I remembred at our firſt Meeting he declar'd himſelf, as I thought, very frankly: But in all his Diſcourſe now, I found him of a wavering uncertain Temper, and therefore I thought it the wiſeſt way to keep my Deſign to my ſelf, and go another way to work. I took my leave of him, and went home. I unloaded my Horſes, and took particular Care of my Bundle of Things. My Salt Water I put into ſhallow Pans in the Sun, which in a Day's time produc'd ſmall Quantities of Salt. I did not want to try Experiments, yet I was pleas'd to ſee the Operations.

I began to ſet my *Still* on Work the next Day, but was ſoon interrupted in my Progreſs by the haſty Arrival of *Mirza*. Said he, we have brought a fine Houſe upon our Heads; yonder's *Achmat* won't be contented without more of the *Francks* Cordial [the *Moors* call all *Europeans Francks*.] I ask'd him how he order'd him when he wak'd, after I had left 'em; he told me, he was ſo greedy after the precious Liquor, that he drain'd the empty Bottles; and he believ'd if *Mahomet* himſelf had made him a Viſit, and *Achmat* had got a Bottle to his Noſe, he would not have bid him welcome till he had ſeen the Bottom. Well, ſaid I, you know the Liquor is not mine, but I'll ſtand by you in the Conſumption of it. Well, if you pleaſe then, ſaid *Mirza*, we'll trouble you with our Company to-night. With

all

all my Heart, ſaid I; ſo we agreed to ſup together. *Mirza* farther added, that the Ladies had a mind to ſee my *Still* at work. I told him they might do as they thought fit, but I would get out of the Way; and accordingly he went to fetch them. The *Mooriſh* Women came down the Walk in a haſty manner to obſerve it, but the *Engliſh* Lady came alone as uſual. I had got on the other Side of the Lawrel Trees, and took Care to appear in her Sight. Aſſoon as ſhe ſaw me, ſhe cautiouſly approach'd me, and told me ſoftly ſhe wanted to have a little Talk with me. I anſwer'd her, we had an Opportunity very favourable; and then let her know how the other Women were employ'd, (beſide we had the Lawrel Walk between us, and I was out of Sight from every Body elſe.) She told me ſhe had ſomething particular to mention to me; ſaid ſhe, we ſhall certainly want Money to accommodate us with many Neceſſaries in our dangerous Voyage. I told her what Money I had ſav'd for our Deſign, but that we ſhould certainly have Occaſion for more, if we were oblig'd to go for *Spain*. That was one of the Reaſons, ſaid ſhe, why I wanted to confer with you: It is in my Power to procure a conſiderable Sum, and tho' it is not ſo much as I have loſt by the Captain, yet I have even a Scruple to take clandeſtinely from him what I may ſay is my own juſtly. I ſoon remov'd her Scruples, and then ſhe farther told me, what was in her Power to take was chiefly in Jewels, which would be better for Concealment and Carriage than Money. By this time ſhe obſerv'd the other Ladies coming towards her, which ſhe inform'd me of; upon that I took my leave, and abſconded. When they were gone off the Walks, *Mirza* came to me to releaſe me, as he call'd it, and told me the Ladies were mighty well pleas'd with the View of my Work and Materials. I told him, I hop'd they would not give me that

Trouble

Trouble often: He anſwer'd, he would take Care for the future.

Now the Criſis of my Project was very near. I went to Town the next Day, and took *Muſtapha* for more Water; and farther added, I ſhould want him a Night or two hence to procure Water by Moon-light. He wonder'd at my Proceeding, but his Maſter told him that I was ſomething very extraordinary, and ſuſpected me of Magick; but he alſo inform'd him that I was uſing my Art for his Benefit. I told him I had ſeveral Materials to waſh in the Sea-Water in the Full of the Moon (which was at that time) and then I ſhould give him no farther Trouble. From thence I went to my Jew's again, and privately procur'd ſeveral ſorts of dry'd Proviſions, as Neats Tongues, Biskets, dry'd Fiſh, Wine, and a ſmall Puncheon of Water, and ſeveral other Neceſſaries, all to be ready at a Moment's Warning.

When I had provided every thing, I went home again, and got an Opportunity the ſame Day to ſpeak with my Miſtreſs. I deſir'd ſhe would be ready about twelve a-clock at Night, with every thing ſhe had a mind to take with her. She told me ſhe could not tell how to eſcape the Vigilance of the Eunuchs, for, ſaid ſhe, they lock me up every Night when they go to Bed; nay, every Day, when they are not with me. I deſir'd her to leave that to me. I invited *Mirza* and *Achmat* to ſup with me that Night, for I told 'em I was oblig'd to ſit up to watch my Work, being it was coming to a Head, and that I was to go to Town before Day. They comply'd with my Requeſt with a great deal of Joy; and the Hour drawing near, they lock'd up the Doors of the Houſe, and came with a great deal of Contentment in their Looks. We ſat down, and I ply'd them with Wine till they thought they had enough. For the finiſhing Stroke I deſir'd 'em to drink one Cup of a Liquor of my own diſtilling,

ing, which they ſoon comply'd with. I went and fetch'd a Bottle of Brandy that I had procur'd on purpoſe, in which I had convey'd a large Quantity of *Laudanum*, to be ready for this Occaſion. I gave 'em each a good large Cup, which they ſwallow'd, but did not very well like the Taſte. I told them I had diſtill'd that Liquor on purpoſe to keep the Fumes of the Wine (or *Cordial*, as *Achmat* would have it) out of the Head. They were very well pleas'd if it would have that Effect, yet deſir'd another Glaſs of Wine to put the Taſte out of their Mouths, which I comply'd with. The Liquor ſoon had its deſir'd Effect, and a profound Sleep lock'd up all their Senſes. I with ſome Fear took the Keys out of *Achmat*'s Pocket, and went directly to the Houſe, and at laſt found the right Key that open'd the Place where my Treaſure was repos'd. Tho' ſhe found her ſelf at Liberty, yet ſhe ſhook with timorous Apprehenſions. I encourag'd her all I could, and brought her the Diſguiſe which I had provided for her. While ſhe was getting ready, I retir'd out of Decency, and got out my Horſes, and an *Italian* Slave, whom I had two or three times taken to Town with me: He underſtood a little *French*, and I had obſerv'd ſomething in his Countenance that ſpoke him worthy of a better Fate. I had not once mention'd to him any thing of my Project, for fear of any Accident, but I had order'd him to be ready to go with me that Night. When I came back, I found my Miſtreſs ready, and ſomething impatient. I inform'd her ſhe muſt ſubmit to another Diſguiſe. She ask'd me what that was: I took out a Paper of *Ombre*, and told her ſhe muſt permit me to rub it over her Face and Hands; which I did: But the Pleaſure of touching her Fleſh in that gentle manner perfectly put me in an Ecſtaſy, which ſhe obſerv'd, for I could not help ſoftly ſqueezing her Hand. She did not ſeem diſpleas'd at my Tranſport, but yet I thought the

Occaſion

Occaſion ſhe had to make Uſe of me made her bear with me. Aſſoon as we were ready we went out, but I firſt lock'd the Doors and left 'em as I found 'em. My Mind was confus'd between Hope, Fear, Joy, and Terror, and I did not doubt but the Lady was in a worſe Condition; but all my Task was to comfort her. When I had help'd her up on Horſe-back, I call'd for the *Italian* Slave, and we both mounted, for I would not let him walk on Foot as uſual.

When we were got ſafe from the Houſe, I began to ask the *Italian* Slave ſeveral Queſtions, as where he was born, how long he had been a Slave, and ſo forth. I found by his Anſwers that he had no Hopes of Liberty, for he had ſent ſeveral Letters to his Friends in *Italy*, and never could receive any Anſwer. Then I began to come nearer the matter, and gave him ſome Hint of our Deſign, but with this Addition, even Death ſhould not deter me from the Execution. He had hardly Patience to hear me out, but begg'd he might ſhare the ſame Fate with me, and if he got his Liberty through my Means, he ſhould never forget the Obligation, but I might be Maſter of that Life I ſhould be the Means of ſaving; for, added he, to live in Slavery is but to be always dying the worſt of Deaths. I ſoon found by his manner of expreſſing himſelf that he was ſincere in what he ſaid. At laſt I told him all my Deſign; which he mightily approv'd of, and ſaid every thing was ſo well concerted, that with the Bleſſing of God it could not miſcarry.

When we arriv'd at the Captain's Town-Houſe, we found *Muſtapha* waiting for me. I had conſider'd we could not do without him, yet I would not venture to mention our Eſcape, till we had him ſafe upon the Sea. I order'd every thing into the Boat, and to hide my diſguis'd Lady, I told *Muſtapha* that it was a young Gentleman that had been bit by a mad Dog, and I had brought

brought him to dip him in the Sea, by the Desire of his Friends that liv'd in the Neighbourhood in the Country, which was allow'd to be the only Cure.

When we had gain'd the main Sea, I began to open my Design to *Mustapha*, but was something surpriz'd to hear him call out for Help. I immediately drew a Pistol out of my Pocket (for I had procur'd several Pair) held it to his Breast, and threaten'd him with Death that Moment, if he offer'd to open his Mouth: I added, that we had gone too far to stop now; and I believe, if he had made any Resistance, I should certainly have dispatch'd him. When he found Resistance would signify nothing, he sat him down and wept bitterly. I was really sorry to see him so much afflicted, and comforted him all I could; and, to encourage him, I told him, assoon as we arriv'd at *Magazan*, (a strong Port belonging to the *Portuguese* upon the *Afric* Coast) where I had design'd to steer our Course, he should not only have his Liberty, but I would reward him with fifty Pistoles for the Pains he should be at. I further added, I would not have given him this Trouble, if I could have found a possibility of doing without him. He seem'd to be satisfied, and promis'd us all the Help he could. I told him we would make the best of our way to *Magazan*, not being above twenty Leagues South of *Sallee*: He seem'd very much pleas'd our Voyage was to be so short, for the Wind was fair, and we hop'd to arrive at *Magazan* in two Days at the farthest. I had provided every thing that was necessary for a much longer Voyage, and when we had directed our Course, and were settled in our Way, I desir'd the Lady to take some Refreshment, and compose her unsettled Thoughts, for we were now out of all manner of Danger. I said this only to comfort her, for I was even in fear of the Captain's Ship, or some other *Moorish* Vessel, meeting us by Chance; and

the

the *Italian* put into my Head another Fear, that as I had declar'd I was never at *Magazan*, nor did not know where it was ſituated, he was not aſſur'd but *Muſtapha* might ſteer his Courſe to ſome Place that was poſſeſs'd by the *Moors*. I gave *Muſtapha* a Hint of it, with a Promiſe of a quick Diſpatch if he betray'd us: But he aſſur'd me there was never another Port between that and *Magazan*. After we had refreſh'd our ſelves, I intreated the Lady to acquaint us how ſhe came into the Power of the Captain. Now we are ſomething at Eaſe, ſaid ſhe obligingly, I ſhall inform you with Pleaſure.

THE HISTORY OF Mrs. *VILLARS.*

MY Father's Name was *Villars*, an eminent Merchant of the City of *Briſtol*. My Mother dy'd when I was very young, ſo that I could never know the Loſs of her. The Care of my Father atton'd for the Want of my Mother: He gave me all the Education that was proper to our Sex; but before I was Sixteen my Father dy'd. The Grief and Sorrow I felt for his Death, was not recompens'd by an Eſtate of two thouſand Pounds a Year, which he left intirely at my own Diſpoſal; beſides ſeveral valuable Jewels of my Mother's. My Fortune, I ſuppoſe, brought me many Admirers; but as I was a Stranger to Love, I had no Inclination to marry: Yet being peſter'd ſo much with their Company and Courtſhip, I retir'd to a Country-Houſe near the Sea Side; and as I did not care to ſee any of my Suitors, ſo whenever they came I always left Word I was gone abroad, or out of Order; and in a little time I got clear of their Impertinence.

I had the Misfortune to be a Woman of Buſineſs, tho' young; for my Father had ſeveral Veſſels at Sea. The

The Captain of one of the Ships that traded to *Turky* brought me a Bill of Lading, and I happen'd to pleaſe him, (tho' more than I knew till afterwards.) In ſhort, he fell deſperately in Love with me, but hearing my Averſion to Matrimony, never declar'd his Paſſion to me; yet by Bribes and Preſents gain'd over to his Intereſt a Maid that liv'd with me, who for a hundred Pound had plac'd him in a Cloſet in my Bed chamber. I came and undreſs'd my ſelf as uſual, and went to Reſt: But I had not been long laid ere I found a Perſon pulling down the Cloaths, and attempting to come to Bed to me. I was prodigiouſly ſurpriz'd and frighten'd, as any one would imagine: I call'd for Help, but no one came to my Aſſiſtance; for the Maid had taken Care of that. I got out of Bed with much ado, and attempted to open the Door, but found I was lock'd in. I us'd Intreaties to the Wretch (who was diſguis'd in ſuch a manner that I could not know him, for he had got a Mask on) but all to no purpoſe: He ſeiz'd me, and I was ſo faint with Struggling, that he was very near accompliſhing his barbarous Deſign, when my other Cloſet Door flew open, (for I had one at each End of the Room) and there came out another Man diſguis'd. My Fear could not be well increas'd; but I was in ſuch a Terror that I did not well know whether I was really alive.

The Perſon who came out laſt ſeiz'd immediately on the other, who let me go to defend himſelf. I ran to the Door, and Fear adding to my Strength, I burſt it open; but how, or which way, I cannot remember. I ran to the Maid's Chamber, and the Noiſe and Confuſion we were in alarm'd the Men Servants. I had ſlipt on a Gown; and when I had got all the Men together, I told 'em the Reaſon of this Alarm. They immediately arm'd themſelves, and ran up to my Chamber, but the Perſons were both gone. In ſearching the Room

Room we found a Piece of a Mask on the Ground, and a Handkerchief mark'd *L. K.* with Stains of Blood in ſeveral Parts of the Room. We could not imagine who they were; and I was ſo very much confus'd and frighten'd, that I did not examine the Bottom of it that Night, but went to Bed in another Room very ill with the Fright; though not before I had given Order to two of my Men Servants to watch at my Chamber Door.

I ſearch'd the Cloſets of that other Room, and under the Bed, before I wou'd venture. And it being a Room where my Father us'd to lie, it had a Bar on the Inſide, ſo I and my Maid went to Bed. Notwithſtanding my Fatigue, Frights and Fears, I fell aſleep, and when I woke in the Morning, found my ſelf very well. I began then to thiuk reaſonably of my laſt Night's Adventure, and eaſily judg'd, that one or both of my Maids muſt be in the Confederacy, for my Door never us'd to be lock'd on the Outſide before. I ſent for all my Servants up, Men and Maids, and related to 'em the Night's Adventure. But they brought me Word, that Mrs. *Suſan* was not to be found. I ſent to examine her Room, but I was inform'd all her things were gone. We all concluded, that ſhe was the Occaſion of the laſt Night's Plot. I did not think fit to ſend after her, rejoycing I had eſcap'd ſuch a baſe Conſpiracy; till going up into my own Chamber, I found a Diamond Necklace, a Ring, my Gold Watch, and about ſixty Guineas in Money taken away; my Eſcritore broke open, and a Bill of five hundred Pounds that was due, taken away. I immediately ſent to *Briſtol* to ſtop Payment, but was told, that my Maid had come, as from me, for the Money, and had receiv'd it ſeveral Hours before. We made the ſtricteſt Search we could for her, but all to no Purpoſe. So I gave it all for loſt. Six Weeks paſs'd on, and no News concerning my Maid.

One

One Morning as I was walking in my Garden, a Sailor brought me a Letter, which was to this Purpose.

Madam,

I *Heartily repent of my Infidelity to you. When I committed that baſe Action, I took Shelter on Board of a Ship that belongs to my Brother, and now lies about ſix Miles off; where the Bearer will conduct your Ladyſhip, if you will be ſo good to come away immediately. The Reaſon of my Repentance, and Sorrow (tho' a ſincere one) is at the Approach of Death, by the Accident of a Fall down the Hold of the Ship, where I broke my left Leg, and fractur'd my Scull, ſo that I have been ſenſeleſs for two Days. But God granting me my Senſes again (tho' with the Information that I can't live four and twenty Hours) has, through his Mercy, convinc'd me, that to expect Pardon from him, is to reſtore what is yours, with a ſincere Confeſſion of the fatal Night's Adventure, that corrupted my Honeſty, and will be the Cauſe of my Death. And farther, if Heaven will grant me the Bleſſing of ſeeing you, I may put you in a Way to prevent ſomething of Ill that may happen to you.*

Your Repenting Servant,

Suſan Prichard.

P. S. *I beg you to keep it Private; and to amuſe your Servants that you bring with you, you may tell 'em, you are going on Board the* Turky *Ship, to ſee the Preſent the* Turky *Merchants are ſending to the Emperor of* Conſtantinople. *The Bearer will conduct you.*

Now I had heard of one of the *Turky* Fleet, that was obliged to put into the Road by a violent Storm: And that it had a Sedan, made with Looking-glaſs, of

a

a very curious Workmanſhip, deſign'd for a Preſent to the *Turkiſh* Emperor. I ask'd the Sailor ſeveral Queſtions concerning the Letter, and he anſwer'd me bluntly, he could not tell any thing about it; but that there was a young Woman, who had fell down their Hold, and had almoſt kill'd her ſelf; and that they did not expect ſhe could ever recover. I reſolv'd to go along with him, but to take two Men Servants and a Maid with me. I walk'd to the Water-ſide, which was about a quarter of a Mile from my Houſe, and there I found a Ship's Boat with eight Oars, and very handſome. I ſtept into it, with my Servants, without any Heſitation, and put off. In about an Hour and a half we came along-ſide of the Veſſel, they mann'd Side for me, and I was handed up, and led into the Cabin, where I found my Maid upon a Pallat-Bed in one Corner of it. Aſſoon as ſhe ſaw me, ſhe attempted to riſe, but ſeem'd not to have Strength enough, and fell down again. I deſir'd ſhe would not put her ſelf to any Pain, but compoſe her Thoughts, that ſhe might be the better able to inform me of what ſhe had promis'd me in her Letter. O! Madam, ſhe cry'd (with Heſitations, Sighs, and ready to faint every Moment) you do not know what I feel at the Sight of you. You bring into my Remembrance the Tranſaction of that fearful Night, but I hope your Goodneſs will forgive me. I ſhall put into your Hands what I have wickedly robb'd you of; and ſince I am going out of this World, I am aſſur'd your Good-nature will prevail for my Pardon. I told her I forgave her freely, and I hop'd Heaven would do ſo too. She thank'd me, but ſaid, ſhe found her ſelf ſo Ill, that ſhe intreated leave to reſt from ſpeaking a Minute or two, to gather a little Breath.

I waited with ſome Impatience, but ſhe remain'd ſo long ſilent, that I really thought ſhe was expir'd. Upon that Suppoſition, I call'd to her, and ſhe anſwer'd me

me but faintly. Well, Madam, ſaid ſhe, as I find you impatient to know what I have promis'd you, I will tell you, as well as I am able.

Captain *Bourn* had for many Months a great Paſſion for you, but finding you averſe to Matrimony, he tamper'd with me, and offer'd me ſuch large Sums of Money, that beat down all my guard of Honeſty, and overcame it quite. He gave me a hundred Pounds, beſides other valuable Preſents, to admit him into your Cloſet, before you went to-bed, which accordingly (dazzled with the luſtre of the Gold) I did. You know what follow'd, and if he had not been prevented by the ſudden Appearance of another Perſon out of the other Cloſet, would have compaſs'd his Deſign. Said I (eagerly) pray do you know who the other Perſon was? Yes Madam, return'd the Wench, it was Mr. *Lawrence Kendrick*, your former Suitor and Guardian, convey'd there for the ſame baſe Intent by your Ladyſhip's Woman. How! cry'd I amaz'd, are you aſſur'd of that? Madam (purſu'd ſhe) when you got out of the Door, Mr. *Kendrick* ſeiz'd upon Mr. *Bourn*, and they ſtruggled together ſome time; but Mr. *Kendrick*'s Mask falling off, Captain *Bourn* knowing him, cry'd, Is it you! In ſhort, they ſoon came to an Eclairciſement, and went down Stairs unperceiv'd by any of us in the Hurry. Where he declar'd to the Captain, that he had prevail'd upon Mrs. *Ellis* (your Woman) for a good Sum of Money, to convey him into the Cloſet, which ſhe did unperceiv'd of any. Thus, (ſaid I) may ill Intentions be ever fruſtrated!

When ſhe had finiſh'd, ſhe begg'd me to have a little more Patience, while ſhe got a little more Strength, and ſhe would reſtore me my Money and Jewels. I was unwilling to wait long, yet thought fifteen hundred Pounds too much to loſe; for my Necklace, Ring, and Watch, were valued by my Father at a thouſand Pounds.

I believe I had been full three Hours on Board, and wanted to be at Home again; and after ſhe had kept ſilent ſome time, I made bold to diſturb her once more. I call'd to her, and told her, I had a great Way to go, and I was afraid of catching cold. She begg'd I would ring a Bell that hung by my Hand, which I did, and the Sailor came in that brought me the Letter. Pray, ſaid the Maid, is my Brother ready to come in? Yes, anſwer'd he, and has been on Board this half Hour. It's very well, ſaid ſhe, Upon that ſhe rais'd her Hand, and unpinn'd a Shutter, that fell down, and let Light enough into the Cabin, which was dark before; but I thought her Illneſs was the Reaſon of that. But to my eternal Amazement I ſaw her riſe from the Pallat, as well as ever I ſaw her in my Life. Before I had Power to ſpeak, Captain *Bourn* enter'd. I could not preſently dive into this Myſtery. I hope Captain (ſaid I, at laſt) that you repent of your raſh and bold Attempt. Yes Madam, (anſwer'd he) that I did not ſucceed in't, but I hope I have it now in my Power to finiſh my Deſign. I askt him what he meant. He told me I ſhould ſoon be inform'd, and if I would not conſent to his Embraces, he would certainly raviſh me that very Night. Upon this Treatment, I began to call for my Servants; but the faithleſs *Suſan* told me they were taken care of, and ſafe a-ſhore. Yes, Madam, return'd the Captain, they are twelve Miles behind us by this Time; and deſir'd I would look out of the Cabin Window, which they had juſt before open'd. I caſt my Eyes behind me; and too ſoon perceiv'd that we were a conſiderable Diſtance from the Land. I did not look long, for the Sight took away my Senſes, and I fell down in a Swoon, and when I came to my ſelf it was far in Night; but I was ſo faint and ill, that my feeble Limbs would not ſupport my Body. Grief attack'd me ſo violently, that it was thought by every body it would ſoon overcome me.

By

By next Morning a ſtrong Fever ſeiz'd me, and all that I remember'd for ſix Weeks was, that I was put to Bed, with the Wretch that betray'd me to attend me. But the Condition I was in really wrought upon her, and produc'd a true Converſion. She lamented more than I; and curs'd her ſelf a thouſand times.

When I had recover'd my Senſes, I was wore away to a Skeleton. And ſure never any one in my Condition found any Relief but Death. But it pleas'd the Divine Being to work another Miracle, and inſenſibly reſtore me to my former Health of Body, but a Mind involv'd in the moſt cruel Torture paſt Imagination.

When I found the Maid's Repentance real, I freely forgave her. The Captain in all this Time had never come near me, but only to enquire after my Health, as *Suſan* inform'd me. But when he perceiv'd I had regain'd my former Health and Beauty, (as he call'd it) I was tormented with his beaſtly Addreſſes. He told me, if I would conſent to marry him, and forgive the Crime he was guilty of, he would immediately ſteer for *England*, which he could reach in a few Days. I conſider'd I was in a Wretch's Power, who, by what he had done already, would ſtick at nothing to gain his Ends; I therefore reſolv'd to flatter him, by the Advice of my Maid; whom, notwithſtanding ſhe had brought me into theſe Diſtreſſes, I had taken into my former Favour. In one of his troubleſome Viſits, I told him, if he would immediately reſtore me to my Liberty, I would upon the Inſtant make him my Husband, when we could procure a proper Perſon to tye the Knot. He anſwer'd me, that the only way to ſecure me to him, was to have Poſſeſſion of my Body before-hand; and, continu'd he, if you think the Action criminal, I'll ſoon cure your Conſcience, by the Licence of the Church. For, ſaid he, if you intend what you propoſe, you will eaſily comply; and nothing elſe will convince me of your

Sincerity. I'll give you one Day to conſider on't; but, (continu'd the Wretch) if you refuſe to ſubmit by fair Means, I to-morrow by Force will enjoy you. So I leave you to conſider on't; and ſaying this, left us in the Cabin. I had deſir'd *Suſan* to conceal our Reconcilement from the Captain, which ſhe artfully had done; and in his Diſcourſe, would often throw in a Word or two in his behalf.

When we were alone, I gave my ſelf over to my Sorrows, and thought of nothing for ſeveral Hours but my unhappy Circumſtances. We both continu'd ſilent, a conſiderable time. Nor indeed had I Power to ſpeak, tho' Heav'n had indu'd me with that Fortitude, that I had reſolv'd ſooner to die, than to ſubmit to his curs'd Propoſals. I told *Suſan*, that I had determin'd to put an end to all my Sorrows by Death; and when that fatal Hour arriv'd of his limited Time, I would plunge a Knife, I had conceal'd for that Deſign, into my Boſom. This Reſolution once more renew'd our Grief, and we mingled Tears together. We wept ſo much, that the Fountains of our Eyes were dry, and we again remain'd ſilent. At laſt *Suſan* broke it, with a Speech to this Purpoſe.

Madam, in the Confuſion of my Thoughts, I have choſe out one that has ſome Probability of Succeſs; but it will at leaſt convince you of my Repentance, and the Deſire I have to reſtore you that Peace I have barbarouſly broke. The Captain yet thinks me in his Intereſt, and if we can contrive it, I'll ſubmit to his loath'd Embraces in your Room, which ſhall be manag'd in this Manner. (You ſhall treat with him upon't to-morrow Morning) The Articles ſhall be theſe; Firſt, that he come in the Dark, and ſtay no longer than one Hour with you; and laſt, that he ſhall not repeat your Familiarity, till you are join'd by the Prieſt.

I muſt

I must confess, this Proposal gave me a dawn of Hope; and if we could but succeed in't, I should not fear his farther Passion, when we were landed. For I knew it was easy to find Protection, when once on Shore in *England*, and I thought the Contrivance feazible enough; for we were much of the same Age, and no perceiv'd Difference in our Make, at least in the Dark.

She left it to me to manage: And I resolv'd to put on a more compos'd Countenance at the Captain's next Visit, which was soon after, tho' he had given me longer Time to consider. When he came in, he begg'd my Pardon for interrupting me, but he came to make me a Present, he said, and put a little Box in my Hand, desiring I would open it, which I did, where I found my Jewels and Money. I restore you that, Madam, (continu'd he) and would not willingly be oblig'd to you for any thing but your Person; and even all your Fortune shall be at your own Disposal, and the Moment you consent to my Desires, I'll deliver you a Paper that shall oblige me to sign whatever Terms you shall think fit to make me. I paus'd a short time, but indeed it was to think what my Tongue should utter so foreign to my Heart.

Captain, said I, you take the only Way to gain your Point; and I must confess, this Shew of Generosity (tho' it's in your Power to force 'em from me again) seems a little to lessen the ill Opinion I have Reason to bear against you: If you'll please to allow me one half Hour to think a little, I'll give you my final Answer to-night. He seem'd very much overjoy'd at my Discourse, and shew'd it in an extravagant unpolite manner, thank'd me, and went out.

I did not want that time to prepare what I had to say, but I thought it was better than to come into it on a sudden. The time expir'd, the Captain came in with an expecting Face. I bad him sit down, which I

found by his Countenance he took as a good Prologue. Sir, said I, I have fully considered every thing, and if you will comply with a few Articles, you shall have Possession of what you desire to-night. Articles, Madam! I'll sign to a Blank (reply'd the Brute) if you please. I told him they were only verbal ones: First, said I, I'll have no Light in the Room; secondly, you shall stay with me but an Hour; and lastly, never to expect any more Favours till we are lawfully marry'd. Madam, return'd the Captain, you so overjoy me that I don't know where I am: I'll comply with all your Articles, and you have made me the happiest of Mankind. He said a great deal more fulsome Stuff, that was as nauseous to my Ears as a Plague-sore to the Sight. He left us, with a Hope I would not long defer his Happiness. It was well I was in a dark Corner of the Cabin; for had I been in the Light, he would have perceiv'd the Confusion in my Countenance.

The hated Hout drew near, and *Susan* with a sincere Grief, and Tears running down her Cheeks, laid her self in the Captain's loathed Bed. I was really griev'd at the Sacrifice she was going to make me, for I was convinc'd she had no loose Desires about her. The Captain enter'd in the Dark, and was as happy as a false Imagination could make him. I must confess, I was in a thousand Frights and Fears lest the Girl should have been discovered; but every thing succeeded too well, and the Captain rose within his limited time, and went out.

Assoon as he was gone, the poor Creature got up from her guilty Scene. Well, Madam, (said she, all drown'd in Tears.) I hope I have convinc'd you (tho' to my eternal Cost) of my Repentance and Sincerity; but I hope Heaven will pardon me, and not lay the Crime to me or you, when fatal Necessity was the only Cause. I gave her all the Comfort I was capable of, and told

told her I did not think it impoſible to oblige him to marry her, when we had him in our Power on Shore, and that Formality would obliterate all melancholy Thoughts. How! (reply'd *Suſan*) No, Madam! tho' I have done all this, yet it was only to ſerve you; and before I would be his Wife, (or indeed any Man's Wife) I would ſubmit to the moſt ſervile Offices of Life to ſupport it: And if the Captain knew how we had deceiv'd him, and would offer to marry me to atone for his Fault, I could not conſent, for I loath the very Thoughts of him. Well then, *Suſan*, ſaid I, when we have overcome all Difficulties, and worn off the Remembrance of our Sufferings, I will ſettle a Competency for Life, that ſhall put thee above all Fear of Want. Madam, reply'd *Suſan*, that's all I ſhall deſire; and then I'll go to ſome Corner of the World, live retir'd, and repent of all my paſt Crimes and Follies. I told her ſhe needed not do that, ſhe might, notwithſtanding what was paſt, live with me. No, Madam, that can never be, return'd *Suſan*; for you muſt of neceſſity, to clear your own Reputation, divulge the Secret, and then with what Confidence ſhall I be able to look upon any one? I told her, it would be eſteem'd as an Action wholly virtuous, without one Spot or Blemiſh. All I was capable of ſaying could not alter her Reſolution; but ſhe perſiſted in retiring from the World, and living recluſe, and I deſiſted from ſpeaking any more upon the Subject.

It had been much happier for us both, if we had never enter'd upon the Argument; for we had not remain'd ſilent a Moment, before the Captain enter'd, with a Light in his Hand, and the utmoſt Fury in his Countenance. Thou Devil! ſaid he to *Suſan*, and haſt thou betray'd me, Wretch! after what I have done for thee? but I ſhall ſtudy ſome way to have ample Vengeance on thee: And for you, Madam, I ſhall give you

ſtill the ſame Terms and Time I firſt propos'd; but that paſt, expect not the leaſt Hope, for I will enjoy you, tho' the Moment after Death ſhould ſeize me. When he had done ſpeaking, he went out: But it was a conſiderable time ere we came out of our Surprize.

We were convinc'd that he had liſten'd and overheard all our Diſcourſe, though we ſpoke but ſoftly; and we fear'd to utter our Thoughts to one another, as imagining he would overhear us ſtill. But *Suſan* at laſt broke out in theſe Words; Good Heav'n! I hope the Puniſhments I am bound to ſuffer will atone for all my Offences! If it will make my Peace with Thee, I'll undergo all the Torments in the World in that bleſt Hope! I had not Words to comfort her, for the thoughts of my own Condition ty'd up my Tongue; but the Pain of Thinking, nothing could exceed. I pray'd to God to bring me out of this Misfortune, or give me Force of Reaſon to ſuffer with Patience a Diſſolution from this World. When *Suſan* heard me, ſhe told me, ſhe could ſee no Path to lead us thro' this Labyrinth of Misfortunes, but through the Gate of Death; and, added ſhe, ſince we muſt die once, the ſooner we leave this troubleſome World, the ſooner we ſhall find Reſt.

Death ſtill bore to me a frosty Sound, however I ſoon reſolv'd upon't; but the manner of it was what moſt confounded me: At laſt we both thought of Drowning, and had reſolv'd, whenever the Captain came to accompliſh his wicked Intent, to throw our ſelves out of the Cabin Window. Will you ſo? ſaid the Captain, (who had overheard us again, for Grief had taken all Caution from us) but I'll ſoon prevent that. He immediately took Hammer and Nails, and nail'd the Shutters ſo cloſe that it was not in our weak Strength to undo them. After he was gone, we ſpent the Night in Prayer; and juſt before the Morning dawn'd, we underſtood by the rocking of the Ship, the Noiſe

Noiſe of the Sailors, and the Loudneſs of the Wind, that we were in a prodigious Storm. This gave us Hopes that the Ship would be caſt away, and that God had heard our Prayers, and would not let us lay violent Hands upon our ſelves. Nay, deceiving Hope was ready to enter our Thoughts, that we might be caſt away upon ſome Shore, and receive Aſſiſtance when we leaſt expected it. The Storm laſted the whole Day and part of the next Night; but as it ſenſibly abated, ſo our Fears increas'd. The Captain gave us another Viſit: Well, ſaid he, Madam, I hope you have had ſufficient time to conſider of my Propoſals, and I am now come for my final Anſwer. Said I, Heav'n has given you an Anſwer by raiſing the Storm; and if you have the leaſt Notion of a Divinity, you'll find 'twas his Voice that ſpoke to you in that Tempeſt, to deſiſt from ſuch a baſe Attempt. Nay, Madam, if you imagine you can preach me from my Deſign, preach on a God's Name. Wretch that thou art! ſaid I, how canſt thou mention that ſacred Name, and yet have ſuch Thoughts as He abhors? I fancy, Madam, return'd the Brute, your Ladyſhip feels the Influence of the Moon, and for fear I ſhould catch the Infection, I'll leave you for a while; but with a Word by the by, If you don't conſent the next time I come, by Hell! (ſince you will not let me mention Heaven) I'll not only raviſh you, but every Sailor in the Ship ſhall do ſo too, if they think fit; and I believe they are ſharp enough ſet to fall to upon worſe Food than I ſhall ſet before them.

He ſaid a great many more groſs things, that would only become his Mouth to utter: And to convince you, Madam, that I will do what I ſay, ſaid he, I ſhall begin with Mrs. *Suſan:* Come Miſtreſs, ſaid he to her, now I have had the firſt Cut of you, I'll let my Sailors go to Dinner. With this he forc'd us both on the Quarter Deck, and call'd all the Seamen about him:

Here my Lads, ſaid he, I have but two dainty Bits, and I'll give you one among you, that you mayn't think I am over-greedy. The Sailors ſtar'd upon one another, and did not well know what he meant, till he told them in Terms plain enough, with Promiſes of Reward to him that would prove the greateſt Rogue. *Suſan* fell upon her Knees, and intreated them not to take Pattern from their barbarous Captain, but to pity a poor unfortunate Woman, reduc'd to the fatal Neceſſity of living no longer. Some of the Sailors made Sport with her Miſery, while others began to pity her. One blunt Fellow cry'd, Damn it! I love a Woman well enough, but don't care to have her forc'd upon me: It's like eating againſt one's Stomach. Beſide, ſaid another, I ſuppoſe there's ſome Reaſon of the Captain's Liberality, or he would not part with her. I obſerv'd one of them that ſtood at ſome Diſtance, taking Notice of what was done, without ſeeming pleas'd. I thought I knew his Face too, and he appear'd above a common Sailor by his Looks and Cleanlineſs. I had not till now appear'd publickly. I was determin'd to ſpeak to him, and to crave his Aſſiſtance. Aſſoon as he ſaw me, he ſeem'd amaz'd, and cry'd, Bleſs me, Madam! how came you here? I told him I was betray'd by the Captain. I was inform'd, ſaid he, that he had two Ladies, Paſſengers for *Zant*, but I little thought you were one of them, for I was not on Board till an Hour after you arriv'd. I begg'd he would take me under his Protection; which he ſwore with a great Oath he would, or the Captain ſhould cut his Throat. Madam, added he, I am Mate of this Veſſel, put in by your honourable Father; and had been Captain, if it had not been for the Tricks of that Raſcal; (pointing to the Captain.)

The Sailors were ſo divided between themſelves, that they had not proceeded to any Violence with *Suſan*; and

and ſhe remain'd leaning upon the Side of the Ship, all drown'd in Tears. The Captain had all this time been laughing at the Diſputes of the Sailors; but perceiving the Mate in Conference with me, came up to him, and with a ſaucy Tone, ask'd him what Buſineſs he had with me. I have no other Buſineſs, anſwer'd the Mate, but to protect her from your ill Uſage. You impertinent Coxcomb, cry'd the Captain, I'll teach you to intermeddle with my Affairs; and upon ſaying this, he lifted up his Hand and ſtruck him: But the Mate ſoon return'd his Blow with Intereſt, and knock'd him down upon the Deck. The Sailors came and parted 'em; but the Captain ſwore that Blow ſhould coſt him his Life. He upon the Inſtant ran into the Cabin for ſome Inſtrument to diſpatch him, as was ſuppos'd; but the Mate follow'd him cloſe, and, knowing his violent Temper, barr'd the Door of the Cabin, ſo that the Captain remain'd a Priſoner.

The Mate took from his own Cabin, which was near the Captain's, a Cutlaſs, and put himſelf againſt the Door, and ſwore he would be the Death of him that firſt attempted to releaſe him; and bad none of them offer to ſtir, till they had heard what he had to ſay.

The Sailors had caſt off all Thoughts from *Suſan*, to hear what the Mate could ſay; who declar'd who I was, and by what Means I was betray'd on Board. When the Sailors found I was their Miſtreſs, and Owner of the Ship, they ſoon began to repent of what they were going about, and declar'd they would ſerve me with their Lives. When I found I had gain'd moſt of 'em on my Side, I told 'em my Story at length, only concealing *Suſan*'s Affair with the Captain; and they ſeem'd all prodigiouſly amaz'd, and ſtood gaping upon me like ſo many Statues.

The Captain in the Cabin was all this time ſwearing, curſing, and making a Noiſe at his Reſtraint. I told the Mate, if he thought fit, we would releaſe him. Yes Madam, if you pleaſe, ſaid he, out of the Great Cabin, but we muſt confine him ſomewhere elſe; well knowing his turbulent Spirit would never be eaſy. I told him I would be guided by him, and if he pleaſed to accept of the Command of the Veſſel (if it was in my Power to give it him) it was at his Service. He return'd me a great many Thanks, and told me he would be very faithful in his Commiſſion. We releas'd the Captain out of the Cabin, but as ſoon as he came upon the Deck, he was ſeiz'd, with a great deal of Difficulty, iron'd, and confin'd to another Cabin. He rag'd like a Madman at this Treatment, but all to no Purpoſe. I told him he ſhould want nothing but his Liberty, neither would I proſecute him, as his Crimes deſerv'd, when we arriv'd in *England*.

I deſir'd the Mate to make for *Briſtol* with all the Expedition imaginable; with a Promiſe that I would recompenſe every common Sailor with double the Wages they expected for their Voyage. They all huzza'd at the News, and one and all promis'd to ſerve me with their Lives. The Mate told me the Wind was againſt us in our Courſe, but that he would ply it to Windward (as they call it) in Expectation of its changing. I ask'd him whereabouts we were, and he told me, very near the Streights of *Gibraltar*, and ſhould have been at *Zant* by that time, but that they were hindred by contrary Winds, and drove back by the late Storm. I told him how the Captain had deceiv'd me, in telling me we were not ſix Days from the *Engliſh* Coaſt.

Suſan's Joy cannot be expreſs'd at our happy Deliverance; and you may be aſſur'd I was as well pleas'd as ſhe was, though it did not appear outwardly ſo much;

much: Besides I considered the Mutability of the things of this World; and we were soon taught, by Experience, the Uncertainty of humane Affairs; for before the Evening we were chac'd by a Rover, who soon came up with us, and took us after an obstinate Resistance; tho' we did not lose one Man, but the barbarous Captain, who was kill'd in the Place of his Confinement, without being in the Action.

The Captain of the Rover was the same we have now made our Escape from. He never would tell me what became of *Susan* and the Crew. Madam, said *Mustapha*, I can inform you: They and all the Crew were ransom'd for a thousand Pound, and their Ship given them again. They did their Endeavour to ransom you, but to no Purpose, for they could never learn what was become of you.

Mrs. *Villars* thus ended her Relation; only added, that the Captain fell desperately in Love with her, and would never hear of her Ransom; tho' he treated her with Decency, allowing her every thing but Liberty; with the conveniency of a Study of Books, which the Captain had procur'd by his Piracy; and ever left in her Closet, her Jewels, and other things of Value, that he had taken out of the Ship.

WHEN Mrs. *Villars* had finish'd her Story, I return'd her Thanks for the Trouble I had given her. Sir, return'd she, Thanks will not recompense me for the Pains I have taken. I shall demand the same Satisfaction from you. I told her I should readily obey her Commands; but I begg'd leave to give her the Relation in *French*, that our *Italian* might partake; for I design, with your leave, to insist on the same from him. Sir, reply'd the Lady, I would have related my unhappy Story in that Language, if you had given me the least Hint. But however, I'll go once more over again,

again, if you pleaſe, in *French*; at leaſt the chief Circumſtances, that we may more ingage the Perſon to declare, how he has ſhar'd the ſame Fate with us. I begg'd ſhe wou'd give me leave to take that Trouble, if it were only to let her ſee, I had imprinted in my Memory what concern'd her ſo ſtrongly, that I could repeat every Circumſtance. She gave me leave to proceed, on which I told her Story over again in *French*, to the *Italian*. When I had finiſh'd, ſhe gave me Thanks, for the Pains I had taken. Tho' I had not been ſo long in the Relation, yet I made up the Time in deſcanting upon her Danger, and hard Fate. That a Lady of her Birth, Beauty, and Eſtate, ſhould be ſo far forſaken by Fortune, as to be reduc'd to wretched Slavery.

I then began my own Story, from my Birth, to our preſent State. Tho' in what related to my Paſſion for the Lady, I did not directly explain; yet I gave her Hints enough to underſtand, ſhe was the Idol of my Soul, and (tho' Love like Hope does oft deceive us) I thought my obſcure Declaration did not diſpleaſe her.

We then deſir'd the *Italian* to proceed in his Relation. He ſighing, told us, he was too much oblig'd to me, to refuſe me any thing, tho' it would call to his Remembrance Tranſactions, that would bring Tears into his Eyes. After ſome Pauſe he began to this Effect.

THE STORY OF THE *ITALIAN* SLAVE.

I Was born at the City of *Rome*, renown'd for its Grandeur and Antiquity, and I may say without boasting, of a noble Family; but had the Misfortune to come last into the World, and the youngest, of five Sons and two Daughters. My Father had a plentiful Fortune, but before his Death he had much weaken'd it, in giving Dowries to my two Sisters, who were both marry'd far above their Fortunes, tho' not equal to their Birth. But Riches now ballance every Thing, and weigh down Birth and humble Virtue, and he that has most Gold, is the greatest Man.

We lost our Mother in our early Days; and my Father Follow'd, before I was ten Years old, having settled all his Estate on his eldest Son to keep up the Grandeur of the Name, and left three Brothers of us to depend on him.

My Father in his Life-time gave us an Education suitable to our Birth and Family; and my Brother, to give

give him his Due, compleated us. Two of my Brothers he procur'd Posts in the Army for, who both lost their Lives in one glorious Campaign. The other died young.

It was imagin'd by every body that had the Privilege to think for me, that their Death would be of no small Advantage to me; and it had for some Years the Appearance of it. My Brother had attain'd to his thirtieth Year, without once thinking of Marriage. But an advantageous Match being propos'd, it was thought convenient for him to pursue it. The Lady that was design'd for him he had never seen; but he was inform'd she was young, rich, and beautiful. He was brought to the Sight of her, and fell violently in Love with her at the first Visit, and his Passion encreas'd every Moment. The Day was fixt for their Nuptials by the Father of the Lady, which was to be the *Easter* following. I had attain'd to my eighteenth Year, and no Provision made for me; and it was thought that this Match would not bring me the least Advantage.

One Day my Brother told me, he had procur'd me the Post of Captain of the Pope's Guards; and tho' it was far beneath my Birth, yet I was pleas'd with it, that I might have the Means to subsist, without being subject to the Caprice of Fortune, and the Dependance of a Brother of an uncertain Temper. My Brother having some urgent Affairs, that call'd him hastily out of Town, he gave me a Letter to deliver to his Mistress, which was to excuse his sudden Departure.

Assoon as he was gone, I went to execute his Commission; and being known to be the Brother of the intended Husband, had the Liberty of presenting the Letter to the Lady's own Hands. But what Misfortunes did that Interview cost me! I no sooner saw her, but I lost my Heart, and the Regard I ow'd my Brother was of no Force against her Charms. I observ'd

she

ſhe perus'd the Letter with Indifferency, which did not diſpleaſe me. Yet I ſo far overcame my growing Paſſion, as to add ſomething to the Excuſe my Brother had wrote. I obſerv'd, in our Converſation, that the propos'd Alliance was not very pleaſing to her; and ſhe at laſt frankly told me, Duty, more than Inclination, would make her comply with it. I told her, were my Brother's Condition mine, and I had been acquainted with her Sentiments, I ſhould not have the Fortitude to ſupport my ill Fortune; yet ſhould have ſo much Regard to her, whatever were my Troubles, not to be oblig'd to Duty, but Inclination.

She told me, with a riſing Bluſh, thoſe Eſpouſals never proſper'd, where the Hand could not beſtow the Heart. I agreed with her Sentiments: but added, I fear'd her Heart was already given, where ſhe could not beſtow her Hand.

Sir, ſaid ſhe, I have ever been a Friend to Plain-dealing, and Truth appears ſo amiable to me, that I neither will, nor can deny it to you. O happy Man, cry'd I, who e'er thou art! Fortune has ſhed her happieſt Influence on thee, and it is not in her Power to make thee miſerable, when bleſt with ſo much conſenting Beauty. Sir, return'd the Lady, the Perſon you eſteem ſo happy, is ignorant of my Inclinations for him, and Fear will make me conceal the Secret. And the chief Reaſon why I diſcloſe it to you, is, that you would inform your Brother; for (added ſhe, with Tears) if I am forc'd to wed him, I ſhall be for ever miſerable. Her Grief touch'd me to the Heart, and ſhe obſerv'd the Sorrow in my Face. I perceive, ſaid ſhe, the Love you bear your Brother affects your Breaſt. Madam, ſaid I, ſince you have made me this frank Declaration, I alſo will be free, and utter all my Heart. The Grief you ſee riſing in my Face, is owing to the Torments of my Soul. The very Moment I beheld your Charms, Love

ſhot

ſhot me with his ſharpeſt-pointed Dart, and all the Hope I have is cold Deſpair. She obſerv'd my Declaration with a great deal of Satisfaction, and remain'd ſilent ſome time, viewing me ſtedfaſtly: Upon which I caſt my Eyes upon the Ground. Sir, ſaid ſhe (with an unconfirm'd Voice) I hope you are ſincere in what you ſay, for the Suppoſition of it will draw another Secret from me, which is this; The Reaſon why I cannot love your Brother is, that I have long ſince given my Heart to — you: The firſt time I ſaw your Face, it left its peaceful manſion of Repoſe, and fled for Shelter to a Stranger's Breaſt. The Joy I felt at this free Declaration ſo tranſported me, that I knew not whether I dreamt or no; but being convinc'd of the Reality, I threw my ſelf at her Feet, and uttered all my Tongue could expreſs, flowing from a ſincere Heart. She told me ſhe had reſolv'd on Death, before ſhe would conſent to wed my Brother: And inform'd me alſo, that her Paſſion had been increaſing upwards of two Years. The firſt time ſhe ſaw me, was taking my leave of my Brothers, when they were going to that Campaign, from which they never return'd. In ſhort, we were as much in Love, as ever any two were.

We agreed to meet the next Day, at the ſame Place, where I had the Liberty of coming, as her Brother-in-Law that was to be.

I was Impatient for the next Day, imagining Time to have no Wings. But the happy Moment came at laſt. We talk'd of nothing for ſeveral Hours, but our mutual Love; at laſt we fell on the ungrateful Subject of the approaching Nuptials, and how we ſhould prevent 'em. I propos'd to her, running away, and tying our ſelves faſt by the ſacred Bond of Wedlock. Though, ſaid ſhe, I will never be any one's but yours, yet we muſt conſider of Futurity: I know your Fortune is but ſmall, and mine, tho' a large one, depends upon my Father;

Father: I'll find ſome Means to defer the Marriage; you may do your Endeavour to diſſuade your Brother, for I fancy Fortune more than Beauty has gain'd his Heart. I aſſur'd her to the contrary, and that he was very much in Love with her. We both wiſh'd it had been otherways, but reſolv'd to love on. We parted, tho' we had not reſolv'd on any thing, and appointed to meet the next Day, in a private Corner of the Town, at an Acquaintance of mine, that I could confide in; tho' I would not truſt him with the Secret, well knowing a Matter of Importance inſlaves the Perſon that diſcloſes it. I told him I had an Intrigue with a Perſon of Quality, that I muſt be obliged to carry on at his Houſe; which he conſented to very willingly. We met according to our Appointment, but an Hour before the time prefixt, not willing one ſhould be before the other. She came alone too, for ſhe would not truſt any of her Servants. We met there every Day; and one time above the reſt, Love being pregnant in both our Eyes, I took the happy Opportunity, and was bleſs'd in the Poſſeſſion of all I wiſh'd on Earth: But Enjoyment was ſo far from palling my Deſires, that it rather encreas'd 'em. We liv'd in all the Delight of Love for a Month, but then came the Bitter to all our Sweets. My Brother ariv'd, and the fatal Day appointed for the Marriage approach'd. We had given our ſelves up ſo intirely to Love, that we did not think of what was to come; or if the intruding Thought did creep in, we would immediately lull it to Reſt like a froward Child.

When we parted, it was with ſuch a Regret and Sorrow, that foreboded our ill Fortune. The Father of my Miſtreſs had order'd every thing for the Nuptial Solemnity, with the greateſt Magnificence; but two Days before it was to be ſolemniz'd, it was reported all over *Rome* that *Don Antonio Grimaldi*'s only Daughter (who was my Miſtreſs) was taken dangerouſly ill. I was not

diſpleas'd

diſpleas'd at the Rumour, as gueſſing her Deſign. My Brother was never from her, and I was pretty well aſſur'd the Sight of him gave her a great deal of Pain. One Day finding my Brother very melancholy, I ask'd him if it was the Indiſpoſition of *Grimaldi*'s Daughter that occaſion'd the Gloom I obſerved in his Countenance. He reply'd ſhe was the Cauſe of what he felt: He farther added, that he thought her Sickneſs counterfeit, only to avoid him; and that he had many Reaſons to believe ſhe had given her Heart to another. I us'd many Arguments with him to leave her, and that ſhe was not worth his farther Thought. But he aſſur'd me it was not in his Power to hate her. I began to reflect with Reaſon on the Conduct of my Love, and found I had involv'd my ſelf in a very dangerous and troubleſome Affair: But notwithſtanding all my Reaſonings, I found my ſelf more and more in Love; and Abſence, which cures a light Paſſion, added Strength to mine; for I had not ſeen her in fifteen Days. I was reſolved at laſt to viſit her, and took the Opportunity when my Brother was with the *Pope* in his Cloſet. I found it no Difficulty to gain Admittance, knowing who I was: But notwithſtanding all my Endeavours, could not get an Opportunity of ſpeaking to her, there being a great many Viſitants. I took an Occaſion of feeling her Pulſe, and we had the Happineſs of moulding our Hands for a Moment. I durſt not ſtay long, for fear my Brother ſhould come while I was there; and yet I had reſolv'd to inform him of my Viſit, which I did the firſt time of our Meeting; but added, that it was Curioſity, and to oblige him, that I gave my ſelf that Trouble. He thank'd me, and ask'd me what I thought of her Indiſpoſition. I told him I could not anſwer for the State of her Heart, but I was aſſur'd that her Body was in a violent Fever. This I ſaid, a little to undeceive him; for ſince he could not be perſuaded to abandon her, I thought

thought it would be more to our Advantage to make him believe it was a real Indiſpoſition. He went to make her a Viſit that Evening, and at his Return told me I had given him true Information, for the Phyſicians had order'd her to be let Blood, and that ſhe was in a dangerous Fever, and her Father deſign'd to ſend her into the Country the next Day. I was mightily pleas'd that he was deceiv'd as well as the Father, and I did not doubt but ſhe had perſuaded the Phyſicians to favour the Deceit.

Accordingly the next Day ſhe was convey'd in a Litter, to a Country Houſe of her Father's, two Leagues from *Rome* upon the River *Tyber*. I flatter'd my ſelf, that her being in the Country would give me a fairer Opportunity of converſing with her: But though I try'd all the Methods imaginable, I could not find the leaſt Glimpſe of Hope in above ſix Weeks time. I was perfectly like a mad Creature, and all my Friends (particularly my Brother) took Notice of my Uneaſineſs. But I kept the Cauſe of it intirely to my ſelf.

Any one that's a Judge of Love, and has ever been in my Circumſtances, may gueſs at what I felt. All I cou'd learn of my Miſtreſs was, that ſhe continu'd very ill. My Mind was tortur'd with a thouſand Imaginations: Sometimes I thought her falſe, and that it was her own Deſire which kept me from ſeeing her; at other times I fancy'd ſhe was really indiſpos'd.

A Month more ſlip'd away, and I was as unlikely to ſee her then as at firſt. One Morning my Brother came into my Chamber, before I was dreſt. He ſem'd over-complaiſant to me, and expreſs'd a Concern for the Alteration of my Temper. I fancy (ſaid he) Brother, that Love has forc'd himſelf into your Breaſt; and that the Object of your Paſſion has no Regard to the Torments you endure. I excus'd my ſelf to him, that Love had no concern in my Humour, but rather an inward

Indiſpoſition

Indiſpoſition of Body. He ſaid many kind things upon that Occaſion, promis'd to aſſiſt me all he could, and left me.

Aſſoon as he was gone, I dreſs'd my ſelf, and got on Horſeback, in order once more to try my Fortune; and I had taken a Reſolution to ſee my Miſtreſs, whatever Hazard I ſhould run.

When I came upon the skirt of a Wood, within half a League of the Place where I was going, I was ſurrounded by a dozen Men on Horſeback, who (notwithſtanding the Reſiſtance I made) got me down, bound me, and carry'd me into the Wood. I imagin'd 'em to be Thieves, by their Proceeding; but they never once attempted to take any thing from me, which alter'd my Opinion, and I began to think they had a Deſign upon my Life.

The State and Uncertainty of my Love made Death look like a Friend.

They kept me in the Wood till the Dusk of the Evening, then clapt me into a Litter, and travell'd hard all Night. The next Morning I was put into a Boat, and hurry'd on board a Veſſel that lay a League off at Sea. Aſſoon as they had receiv'd me, they weighed and ſet Sail; and the Perſon that ſeem'd to have Command in the Boat, prov'd to be the Captain of the Veſſel.

They carry'd me bound into his Cabin. When we were alone, he gave me a Paper, which I ſoon knew to be my Brother's Hand-writing; and in it an open Letter, whoſe Hand I could not tell by the Direction. Upon this the *Italian* took 'em both out of his Boſom. See, ſaid he, the fatal Scroll, which has robb'd me of all Joy in this Life, and which I have kept during my Captivity.

The

The firſt Letter he read was to this Effect.

I Will not call thee by the Name of Brother; That thou haſt baſely forfeited. But know, the Hand of Heav'n hangs over thee, to puniſh thy unfaithful dealing with one, who thinks it the greateſt Curſe on Earth, that our Parents ſhould be the ſame. The enclos'd Letter came into my Hands, by the Honeſty of her that was commiſſion'd to bring it to thee; who abhorring thy guilty Commerce with her ungrateful Miſtreſs, has diſcover'd thy Scene of Villany. Know, after thou haſt read this, prepare to ſuffer for thy Ingratitude. An Hour's Space is the Length of thy Life, and I think Death too ſmall a Revenge, for the Wrongs thou haſt committed againſt

Hernando Alvares.

The other was as follows.

To Antonio Alvares.

LIFE of my Life! I have reſolv'd to hazard every thing to let you know the State of my Body and Mind. Though Body, Life, and Heart are entirely thine, yet I fear Death will rob thee of 'em. My counterfeit Illneſs, that Day you ſaw me, (without having the Happineſs of ſpeaking to each other) brought a real Diſtemper upon me, and my Fever took away my Underſtanding. I hope I have not in my Ravings declar'd the Secret of my Soul. The Sight of your Brother retards my Health, and the Hopes I have of my Recovery, is once more to ſee thee, thou Darling of my Heart. I have prevail'd upon one of my Women, with Preſents and Promiſes (who I hope is honeſt) to deliver this to thee. Our private Meetings, I fear, will prove fatal to me; for I find our Commerce, if I ſurvive, will make me a Mother; but for fear it may touch me more in what thou art to ſuffer, if known

to be the Father, Death ſhall releaſe thee from that Danger.

Upon the reading of theſe two Letters, different Paſſions ſwell'd in my Soul. My Heart was torn with Agonies for her I lov'd, and my Breaſt was fir'd with Revenge againſt my unnatural Brother: For as he had ſhook off all Brotherly Love, I thought it was but Juſtice I ſhould do ſo too.

I ſat a conſiderable time in the utmoſt Agony, not for fear of Death; for I muſt confeſs, I had not the leaſt Thought about it. The Captain of the Veſſel ſeeing me in that Condition, ſpoke to me after this manner. Sir, tho' I am well paid by your Brother, to end your Life, yet I have ſo much Compaſſion for your Sufferings, (knowing your Crime to be only Love) to mitigate your Sentence, I'll put you into a Boat, with two Men to conduct you, and every thing that ſhall be neceſſary: Upon this Condition, that you will give me your Word and Honour, not to appear at *Rome* in forty Days.

I thank'd him for his Kindneſs, gave him my Word, and told him it was not in fear of Death, but only to diſappoint my barbarous Brother. Immediately a Boat was hoiſted out, and every thing that was needful for a Month's Voyage. My two Men were paid for the Voyage before-hand, and we left the Ship. I order'd 'em to ſteer for *Leghorn*, becauſe there I could be furniſh'd with every thing that I wanted, from my Siſter, who had reſided there two Years with her Husband, a Nobleman of *Florence*. But the Wind not proving favourable, we were drove out of our intended Courſe, and had it not been for a *French* Veſſel, bound for *Malta*, who took us up, we had certainly periſh'd. And happy for me, had it been my Fate to have had a Wave for my Winding-ſheet; for two Days after we were received on Board, a Corſair of *Barbary* met with us, and took us all Priſoners.

I

I made no extraordinary Appearance, being I was always diſguis'd when I went to the Houſe where my Miſtreſs lay indiſpos'd. *Hamet* (the Name of our *Iriſh* Renegado) valu'd my Ranſom but at two hundred Pounds. I wrote to both my Siſters ſeveral times, and laid before 'em my unhappy Condition, but never could hear from 'em. So that I either fear'd my Letters had miſcarry'd, or they were willing to forget an unhappy Wretch like my Self. Tho', to ſay Truth, I never receiv'd any hard Uſage from *Hamet*; therefore if the Divine Being will favour us in our Eſcape, I'll faithfully ſend him my Ranſom.

WHEN he had ended his Story, we condol'd with one another, for our Misfortunes had a Reſemblance. By this time the Day began to dawn, and *Muſtapha* told us we ſhould reach *Magazan* before Night. We were all mightily overjoy'd, becauſe we expected to be a Day longer in our Voyage. I begg'd the Favour of Mrs. *Villars*, to let me cleanſe her Face from the Ombre; which ſhe conſented to. I was fill'd with Contemplation of her Beauty, but was rous'd from thoſe pleaſing Thoughts, by the Appearance of ſeveral low'ring Clouds that ſeem'd to threaten us with a Hurrican, frequent in thoſe Parts; and tho' they ſeldom laſt long, yet they might prove dangerous to our ſmall Veſſel.

Muſtapha advis'd to make to Shore, but I could by no Perſuaſion agree to that, but order'd him to hold on his Courſe for *Magazan*. But the Tempeſt roſe ſo ſuddenly, and ſo violent, that we were oblig'd to leave our ſelves to the Mercy of the Waves; and we did not know which way we drove, for the dark Clouds had almoſt form'd another Night.

Our Boat was a new ſtout Boat, and bore the Weather very well, but it frighten'd Mrs. *Villars* very much; and I had no other Regard but for her. The Tempeſt continu'd for near half the Day, and when it grew calm,

and

and clear'd up, we were not in Sight of Land. By good Fortune I had provided a Compaſs; and I order'd *Muſtapha* to ſteer due South, the ſame Courſe we kept before the Storm began, which was before the Wind. But tho' we had ſail'd ſeveral Hours South, we could not diſcover any Land. *Muſtapha* adviſ'd us to put to Windward back, for he did not doubt but we had over-ſhot *Magazan* in the Storm.

We were preparing to tack about, when we diſcover'd a Sail, within half a League of us; for it was hazy Weather, notwithſtanding the Storm was over, or we ſhould have perceiv'd her time enough to have avoided her. We kept upon a Wind, and it freſhning upon us, our Sail ſplit, and we found it was impoſſible to avoid the Ship, who gain'd upon us every Moment. We thought it our wiſeſt Courſe to lie by, and wait for her. Now all the Hope we had was, that the Veſſel would prove a Ship of *Europe*. I deſir'd Mrs. *Villars* to conceal her Sex, and begg'd the Favour of the *Italian* and *Muſtapha* to keep the Secret. The Ship was near us, and to our ſurpriſing Joy, hoiſted *French* Colours. We immediately put on Board, becauſe they lay by on purpoſe.

We were ſoon inform'd Monſieur *Pidau de St. Olon* was on Board, the Ambaſſador from the King of *France* to the Emperor of *Morocco*, to treat of Peace between the two Crowns. I immediately begg'd to be brought to the Ambaſſador's Preſence, who receiv'd us very kindly. I told him all our Stories, but conceal'd that of Mrs. *Villars*, for fear of any Accident. He us'd us very civilly, and promis'd us his Protection. He ſaid his Affair would not detain him long, and he would be ſure to gain ſafe Conduct for us into our own Country.

I return'd him Thanks for his generous Proffer, and begg'd he would command my Life, to ſee how readily

I would obey him. He told me, ſince I was willing to oblige him, he would ſoon put it in my Power to ſerve him.

I have, ſaid he, loſt three of my Retinue in the Voyage, two by Sickneſs, and one drown'd by Accident. You'll juſt make up that Number, and you need not take any Care for Habits; I will provide for you. The fourth Perſon in your Company I believe you'll be ſatisfy'd ſhould be taken Care of on Board our Ship, for his Landing on the *African* Coaſt may prove prejudicial to your Affairs. I was mightily pleas'd with his Propoſals, and communicated it to Mrs. *Villars* and our *Italian* Gentleman. Mrs. *Villars* told me, ſhe was intirely under my Conduct, and the *Italian* thought he ſhould have a better Opportunity of getting into his own Country from *Mequinez*, than *France*. I would not ſuffer Monſieur *St. Olon* to cloath us as he propos'd; for I had procur'd of the *Jew* four rich Suits of *European* Cloaths, for a Trifle, which I deſign'd for Mrs. *Villars*, and my ſelf; for we intended ſhe ſhould put off her *Mooriſh* Dreſs, the firſt Opportunity.

The Ambaſſador provided a Cabin for Mrs. *Villars* and me; and he ſeem'd mightily taken with her Youth and Beauty, (as a Boy;) and he would often ſay, Nature had miſtaken her, deſigning her for the faireſt of the ſofteſt Sex. Theſe Encomiums made me very uneaſy, fearing he ſhould find out the Truth. But I underſtood afterwards, he had not the leaſt Miſtruſt.

He treated us very ſplendidly at Supper, conſidering we were at Sea. When the Ambaſſador went to Reſt, Mrs. *Villars* and I retir'd to the Cabin allotted us. What a ſenſible Pleaſure did I feel, to have the Happineſs of her Company alone, without the Fears and Terrors of offending any one! She perceiv'd a Satisfaction in my Countenance, that ſpoke the Joy of my Heart; and by her Diſcourſe that enſu'd, ſhe was in ſome Fear, leſt a guilty Thought had work'd that Change.

Mr. *Boyle*, (ſaid ſhe) I hope you know what Regard to pay my Sex, and do not wrong the good Opinion I have conceiv'd of you. I own the greateſt Obligation to you, and I am not diſpleas'd I am in your Power, while you uſe that Power with Moderation. I had hardly the Patience to hear her out. Madam, return'd I, be aſſur'd, your own Soul ſhall not be more pure than my Thoughts. But yet, I will take the Freedom to declare, no Perſon in the World has that Command over me as you have. I muſt own you have it in your Power to puniſh me, by ſlighting a Heart full of the moſt tender Regard for you; and all I ask, is only leave to hope; if I am deny'd that, the utmoſt of my Reſentments to you, ſhall only be in hating Life, which will be a Burden not able for me long to bear. It would be baſe in me, (return'd Mrs. *Villars*) to give Torments where I am oblig'd; I think, to diſguiſe our Thoughts, is an Art better loſt, than learnt: And to deal frankly with you, I cannot find in my Heart any Averſion for you; which is a Declaration, if you knew my Temper, ought to ſatisfy you. I ſaid all the tender things I was capable of, in return for this great Bleſſing, and our Converſation laſted ſeveral Hours. I told her at laſt, I was well aſſur'd ſhe wanted Reſt; and whatever Pleaſure I took in her Company, I would deprive my ſelf of it, and leave her to her Repoſe.

She ſeem'd very much concern'd, that I was oblig'd to leave her alone; well knowing I ſhould not get the Convenience of a Place to reſt my ſelf.

I told her there was not any Fatigue I would not undergo for her with Pleaſure. I left her, and Night ſoon ſlipt away in pleaſing Imaginations. I was ſurpriz'd to ſee her, who was ever in my Thoughts, come out of the Cabin dreſs'd. Madam, ſaid I to her, I hope you have had nothing to diſturb your Sleep. She obligingly anſwer'd me, Nothing but the Thoughts of your waking;

waking; and therefore ſhe deſir'd I would go and repoſe my ſelf in the Cabin, and I think, ſaid ſhe, 'tis my Duty to watch now. I excus'd my ſelf, and told her it was but for one Night more, for in all Probability we ſhould land the next Day, and provide our ſelves with better Accommodation.

We went into the Cabin together, and our Converſation chiefly center'd on Love. She told me at laſt, ſhe would leave her Acknowledgments to me, till ſhe was more at Liberty, and in her own Country, for fear I ſhould imagine the Need ſhe had of my Service ſhould make her declare her ſelf in my Favour. When I found ſo fair a Beginning, I was reſolv'd to puſh my Fortune; till with many Intreaties, Vows, and Oaths of my Fidelity, ſhe own'd to me ſhe had a tender Regard for me when ſhe ſaw me firſt, for ſhe was convinc'd of my Love at our firſt Converſation; not, continu'd ſhe, that I had any Underſtanding in the Art of Love, but I knew the Hazard you had put your ſelf in to ſerve me, could have no other Motive but that Paſſion; and the more I thought of it, the more I found my Heart inclining to believe you.

Thoſe Perſons that have felt the ſoft Paſſion, may make a Judgment of the Tranſports I was in at this Declaration. I kiſs'd her Hand a thouſand times, and preſs'd it to my Heart. She begg'd me to curb my Tranſport, for fear of being overheard or obſerved; for, continu'd ſhe, you may remember, in my Relation of my Misfortunes, how near we were ſuffering by ſuch an Overſight. This kind Caution bridled my Tongue, but could not command my Eyes; they ſpoke the Language of my Soul.

Our ſilent Converſation was diſturb'd by the Joy of the Sailors in diſcovering Land; and we thought it prudent to wait on the Ambaſſador, and congratulate him

upon it. He receiv'd us very kindly, and told us he was pleas'd upon our Accounts, that we might recover on Shore the Fatigue of the Sea and our Captivity. The Captain told us we ſhould come to an Anchor before Dinner in the Port of *Mammora*. I was mightily ſurpriz'd to find we were got to the South of *Sallee*, and found that the Tempeſt had drove us back beyond *Sallee* ſeveral Leagues. This we ſtill eſteem'd a greater Happineſs, and if *Muſtapha* had not been guided by me, we had miſs'd the good Fortune of meeting with the *French* Veſſel, and of courſe made the Port of *Sallee* whether we would or no. Upon this Thought, I began to imagine that *Muſtapha*, as underſtanding the Mathematicks, knew where we were, and conſequently had deſign'd to betray us. I communicated my Thoughts to Monſieur St. *Olon*, and he came into my Sentiments. He immediately call'd the Captain of the Ship, and order'd *Muſtapha* to be ſtrictly guarded in his Abſence; and if any *Moors* came on Board, to prevent his ſeeing of them; but deſir'd that he might want nothing but his Liberty. When we came to an Anchor, the Captain was ſent on Shore to acquaint the *Moors* with the Arrival of an Ambaſſador from *France*; and preſently the Fort ſaluted him with one and twenty Guns, which was return'd from the Ship Gun for Gun. The Governor of *Mammora* in an Hour's time came on Board attended, who ſaluted our Ambaſſador, and begg'd he would have Patience to ſtay in the Ship, till he had acquainted the Emperor his Maſter with his Arrival. The Ambaſſador invited him to an Entertainment; and tho' I obſerv'd he refus'd Wine, yet he and his Retinue ſwallow'd the Punch ſo faſt that their Heads prov'd as light as their Heels. When they went on Shore again, the Cannon of the Ship gave 'em a Salvo, which was return'd by the Fort aſſoon as ever they were

were landed. The next Day an Order came from the Emperor that we ſhould immediately repair to *Mequinez*, the Place where the Emperor reſided.

The next Day the Ambaſſador ſet forward with his whole Retinue, among which were Mrs. *Villars*, the *Italian*, and my ſelf, dreſt richly after the *European* Faſhion. We were provided with *Dromedaries* to carry us, all but the Ambaſſador, who was preſented with an *Arabian* Courſer. Within a Mile or two of *Mequinez* we perceiv'd the King at the Head of his Army in a great Plain. At firſt I thought it a Mark of Reſpect to the Ambaſſador of *France*; but found it was purely Accident, for our Guide led us out of the Way to avoid 'em.

When we arriv'd at *Mequinez*, we were led to a Houſe belonging to the *French* Conſul, or rather a Houſe he had hir'd for that Occaſion. Before we were well enter'd the Houſe, a Guard of *Moors* was fixt upon us, and ſtrict Orders given not a Soul ſhould ſtir out, not even the Ambaſſador nor Conſul. I thought this an odd Proceeding, and ſometimes imagin'd it was upon our Account, (as Fear is an expeditious Painter.) But my Timerity vaniſh'd, when Monſieur St. *Olon* inform'd me, it was the *Mooriſh* Cuſtom not to let a Foreign Ambaſſador give or receive Viſits till after his firſt Audience.

Mrs. *Villars* and I had an Apartment allotted us, with but one Bed in it, after the *Mooriſh* Manner. She told me, ſhe could not bear the Thoughts of my watching every Night, and begg'd I would go to Reſt with the *Italian*; but we found he was provided of a Companion, one of the Retinue, and there was no help for it. I always retir'd when my Miſtreſs undreſs'd herſelf, and gave her time to go into Bed: I then with a Quilt laid my ſelf down on the Floor, but was far from taking any Repoſe. The Thoughts of the Woman I

lov'd being ſo near me, naked in Bed, kindled ſuch a Deſire in my Breaſt; and the Pain I took to ſmother it, perfectly burnt me up. I would have my Readers excuſe me, if they are diſoblig'd at any part of my Story, becauſe I am only relating Matters of Fact.

The next Day, when I roſe from my boarded Bed, I retir'd to give the Loadſtone of my Deſires time to dreſs her ſelf: When I enter'd the Room again, ſhe obſerv'd my Countenance very attentively, and told me ſhe was griev'd to find in my Features ſomething that ſpoke a diſorder'd Body; which I am ſure, ſaid ſhe, is for want of Reſt: But, added ſhe, I beg it as a Favour, you will immediately undreſs your ſelf, and go into Bed, and try to repoſe your ſelf, and I'll make your Excuſe to the Ambaſſador. I refus'd it a great while, but in ſhort ſhe forc'd me to comply with her Commands. I went to Bed, but new Thoughts again attack'd me, and drove Sleep away. Mrs. *Villars* had retir'd, and ſtaid about an Hour. When ſhe came in again, ſhe ſtole ſoftly for fear of diſturbing me. My Mind was ſo violently agitated, that I really began to be out of Order, and feveriſh, which ſhe obſerv'd, and came to the Bed ſide, and with a tender Inquietude aſk'd me how I did. I took hold of her Hand, preſs'd it to my Lips, and thank'd her for her kind Care of me. Alas! ſhe cry'd, you are very much indiſpos'd, and I am the Cauſe of it. Upon this the Tears ran down her Cheeks, like Morning Dew on Roſes. Her Tenderneſs gave me all the Joy imaginable; and as ſhe lean'd her Head over me, weeping. I preſs'd her ſoft Lips cloſe to mine, which plung'd my Soul in Eſtaſies of Joy. She bluſh'd at my Freedom, yet ſtill begg'd I would try to ſleep. I told her it was impoſſible, while ſhe was there; upon this ſhe was going to retire in haſte, but I caught her by the ſoft Hand, and told her if ſhe went out it would be a greater Impoſſibility for me

to

to reſt. She conjur'd me by that Love I profeſs'd, (if it was not a Falſhood) to declare to her the Torments of my Mind. She inſiſted ſo much upon't, that I told her the Secret of my Heart. She fell upon her Knees, and begg'd I would not mention it any more, for ſhe own'd herſelf ſo much oblig'd to me, there was not any thing in her Power ſhe could refuſe me, but that. I begg'd her Pardon, and had reſolv'd to ſuffer Death ſooner than to have diſclos'd my Malady; but I would be ever ſilent upon that Theme, till ſhe commanded me to ſpeak. My dear *Boyle*, ſaid ſhe, (I am not aſham'd to call you ſo) ſtay till we arrive in *England*, and I here vow to make you mine, whenever you ſhall command me. Upon ſaying this ſhe join'd her Lips to mine, not conſidering that in endeavouring to ſuppreſs my Flame, ſhe pour'd Oyl upon it, and made it burn the fiercer. I told her, true Love was above nice Formality, and that Marriages were made in Heaven. Said ſhe, I hope they are, but beg by both our Loves to drop this Theme. I told her I would, tho' Death ſhould follow. I remain'd ſilent for ſome time, while Tears ſtopt her Speech. We were interrupted by a Meſſenger from the Ambaſſador, who came to invite us to Dinner, (for he always did us the Favour of dining at his Table.) I begg'd to be excus'd, for I found my ſelf a little indiſpos'd. The Meſſenger had not been gone a Moment before the Ambaſſador came in to enquire after my Health, and brought his Phyſician with him, who feeling my Pulſe, told him I was in a Fever, but Bleeding he did not doubt would give me Eaſe. I told him I ſhould be better in the Morning, if not, I would take his Advice. The Ambaſſador would have Mr. *Villars*, (as we had nam'd her) to dinner with him, who had endeavour'd to compoſe her ſelf while they had been in the Room. As ſhe was going from me,

ſhe ſqueez'd my Hand, and ſaid, Endeavour to compoſe your ſelf to Reſt, and you'll ſoon be better.

They retir'd and left me to my own Thoughts, which were various and diſjointed: Mrs. *Villars* did not ſtay long; ſhe came in ſoftly as before, expecting that I might have been aſleep. When ſhe found I was in the ſame Diſorder, ſhe burſt into Tears, and cry'd, Will nothing ſatisfy you but my Undoing? No Madam, ſaid I, I will fight with my Deſires, and am reſolv'd to conquer or die. She ſtaid with me till Supper, and our whole Diſcourſe was upon the Paſſion of Love. When ſhe came back from Supper, I had got up and had dreſt my ſelf; but the Combat in my Mind had really diſorder'd my Body, which ſhe ſoon ſaw: She begg'd I would go to Bed again, and ſhe would watch me. I told her, the World ſhould not prevail upon me to break her Reſt; nor even ſhe her ſelf, who was more to me than the World. I had ſat me down upon the Bed, and Mrs. *Villars* came and ſat down by me. We remain'd ſilent a conſiderable [illegible]e: at laſt ſhe took my Hands in hers, and preſs'd me by the Fingers.

Mr. *Boyle*, ſaid ſhe, I have overcome my ſelf: I cannot ſee you in this Torture of Body and Mind, and not [illegible] moote to your Eaſe. Here ſolemnly ſwear to be my Husband, and do with me what you pleaſe: I hope you are a Man of Honour, and that's what I rely upon. Nothing in this World could have tranſported me ſo much as thoſe few Words did: I fell upon my Knees, kiſs'd her Hands, and did I know not what! Madam, ſaid I, you have made me the happieſt Man the World contains; and if I thought my Heart and Tongue did not agree in what I am going to ſay, I would pull 'em both out this Moment. When I had ſaid this, I fell on my Knees, and made this ſhort Vow. *Thou God*

God that knowſt the Heart of Man; I do beſeech Thee puniſh me with Eternity of Torments, if ever I prove falſe to this Darling of my Soul, whom before Thee I take (as the greateſt Bleſſing) to be my lawful Wife. And here I ſwear (ſaid ſhe, kneeling) *to take no other to my Bed and Heart; and with this Kiſs,* ſaid ſhe, *I ſeal the ſacred Union.* I told her nothing could be more binding, and the Prieſt could but confirm what we had done already.

Now the tender Moment was approaching to crown my Joys with all I wiſh'd on Earth, Kings on their Thrones to me ſeem'd poor and baſe, and I'd not have chang'd to be the Monarch of the Univerſe. I begg'd my dear Bride I might be her Bride-maid as well as Husband, and that ſhe would give me leave to undreſs her. Said ſhe, My Love, my Life, my Husband, I am to obey you in every thing that's in my Power, and when I fail in my Obedience, may I be miſerable in the Loſs of you. I was too eager to ſay any thing in Return, but I undreſs'd her, put her to Bed, and you may be ſure I did not ſtay long behind. The Veil of Night was drawn round us, and I plung'd into a Sea of Pleaſures, too delicate for Words to expreſs.

The next Day, the Ambaſſador ſaw Contentment in both our Faces, and congratulated me for the Recovery of my Health. Never was there ſo tender a Wife; and the longer I had the Happineſs of Enjoyment, the more my Love was rais'd. The next Day, the Ambaſſador was to have his firſt Audience, and we were all to be in Readineſs by Seven in the Morning. I got up early, and dreſs'd my dear Wife in a new Suit of Clothes, on purpoſe for this Occaſion. The Governor of *Alcaſſar, Hamet addo Riffy*, was to be our Maſter of the Ceremonies, who attended us with ſeveral *Moors* of Quality, and a Troop of the King's Blacks, as Guards. We ſet forward about eight a-clock, in

this Order. 1. Twelve of the *Moor* Guards. 2. Several of the Nobility, two by two. 3. The Ambaſſador, with *Hamet addo Riffy* on his Right Hand, preceded by two Trumpets and Kettle-Drums, (the Poſt of Honour is on the Left among *Moors*, becauſe you have the Command of their Sword.) 4. Twenty-four Gentlemen of the Ambaſſador's Train, two by two. 5. Twelve *French* Slaves that carry'd the Preſents. 6. Twelve more of the Guards: And the Order was clos'd by a *Moriſh* Mob, that abus'd us with their Tongues all they could; nay ſome of them attempted to throw Stones, but were baſtinado'd by the Guards. We were all on Foot, though the King's Palace was a Mile from the Place where we ſet out.

I was mightily concern'd at the Fatigue my dear Wife underwent, for it was violent hot; tho' we had the beſt on't, for going next the Ambaſſador (who order'd we ſhould do ſo) we had ſome Shelter from the Umbrella that was carried over his Head.

We enter'd the Palace through the Marble Gate, (ſo call'd from two Marble Pillars that adorn it) and from thence, immur'd with white Walls and black Guards on each Side, we arriv'd at a ſtately Pavilion; where a Halt was commanded 'till the King was acquainted with our Arrival. We waited ſome Time, but at laſt ſaw him coming, mounted on a white Horſe, through one of the Avenues that led to the Pavilion. His Guards (who had lin'd that Paſſage on each Side) bow'd down to the Ground as he paſs'd along. He made but a very indifferent Appearance. Aſſoon as he came to the Portico, he gave a Launce that he bore to one of his Guard, got from his Horſe, and ſquatted down upon the Floor without any thing under him. He had nothing in his Dreſs to be diſtinguiſh'd from the reſt of his Subjects, but was muffled up to the Eyes with a Chocolate-colour Handkerchief, that did not ſeem

over

over clean. His Legs and Arms were bare: As to his Age, he ſeem'd to be about Fifty; of a very tawny Complexion, and very lean; his Hair black, inclining to grey; of a middle Stature, with hollow Cheeks, and Eyes black, a ſmall hook'd Noſe, and thick Lips. Some of his Courtiers ſat down on each Side of him, bare-legg'd and bare-headed; and behind him ſtood a Black with a great Fan in his Hand, not only to cool him, but to keep off the Muskito's, a ſmall Fly, very troubleſome in moſt Parts of *Africa*.

Mahumet ben Addo Otar, his chief Miniſter and Favourite, was the only Perſon that ſtood.

Aſſoon as the Emperor had ſquatted down on the Floor, he repeated theſe Words in *Arabic* three times, *Tay buon*, which is as much as to ſay, *You are welcome*; a common Expreſſion when they are addreſs'd to by a Foreigner. Then our Ambaſſador made a long Speech in *French*, prepar'd for that Purpoſe; which was only a Panegyrick upon both Kings, fulſome enough; but the *French* deal much in wordy Compliments. The Interpreter, when the Ambaſſador had done, read the ſame in *Arabic* to the Emperor. The Speech was very long in *French* and *Arabic*, but the Emperor heard it out patiently, which was reckon'd a good Omen; he alſo excus'd himſelf that he did not admit him ſooner to his Audience, it being the *Ramadan*, or *Eaſter*. When the Compliments were over, the Ambaſſador preſented all his Retinue to the Emperor, but I obſerv'd he took a particular Notice of my Wife, and ey'd her ſeveral times, which gave me a great deal of Uneaſineſs; for it is as dangerous to be a handſome Man as a handſome Woman in *Morocco*, if the Brute of an Emperor ſhould have a Fancy for 'em.

I long'd to have an end of our Audience.

After we were preſented, the Ambaſſador order'd his Preſents to be open'd and ſpread before the Emperor; which

which conſiſted of fine Arms made at *Paris*, ſeveral *Engliſh* Watches and Cloth, two *Perſian* Carpets, and two Pieces of Gold and Silver Brocade. The Emperor, in return, gave the Ambaſſador four young Slaves, three of 'em *French*, (tho' he took 'em all for the ſame Nation) but the other was an *Engliſhman*, and the ſame Perſon I mentioned in the Beginning of this Relation, who went in the ſame Boat on Board of the *Succeſs*. I was very much confounded at ſeeing him, well knowing he was on Board when I fell out of the Ship. I long'd for an Opportunity to confer with him, tho' I could not perceive by his Looks that he knew me; but that might be from my Change of Habit, and the Sun's tarniſhing my Complexion.

The Emperor roſe, (when he had given the Slaves) mounted, and rode off; and we went home in the ſame Order as we came there; only the chief Miniſter, *Mahumet ben Addo Otar*, accompany'd the Ambaſſador as far as the Marble Gate. I inform'd my dear Wife, when we came to our Lodging, the Anxiety I was in when the Emperor ey'd her: She told me ſhe had made the ſame Obſervation with much Uneaſineſs; for, ſaid ſhe, I had not the Preſence of Mind, upon the Inſtant, to imagine my ſelf a Man. However, we both wiſh'd our ſelves on Board, and the Embaſſy well over, and then we might make ourſelves merry with our Fears.

The next Day our Fears were much encreas'd; for hearing a Noiſe in the Street, we went to look out to know the Reaſon, and diſcover'd *Hamet*, our *Iriſh* Renegado, with ſeveral Priſoners manacled. We ſoon retir'd again, but learnt by other People, that they were going to the Emperor, that he might make his Choice. The Sight of him renew'd our Fears, as I ſaid, and we reſolv'd immediately to get Leave to go on Board, for fear of ſome unlucky Turn of Fortune.

I upon

I upon the Inſtant went to wait on the Ambaſſador, and declar'd to him what I had ſeen, begging Leave at the ſame time we might be ſuffer'd to go on Board. He told me he would comply with my Requeſt for Mr. *Villars* and the *Italian*. but begg'd it as a Favour that I would ſtay with him, for he ſhould have great need of my Aſſiſtance; and if any thing ſhould fall out, he would engage for my Liberty. Though the Requeſt cut me to the Heart, yet it was neither Prudence nor good Manners to refuſe him. I gave him my Promiſe to obey his Commands, but begg'd he would not inſiſt upon my going abroad but as ſeldom as poſſible. I went to my Wife, (my Readers, perhaps, may ſmile at my calling her *Wife*, but I will aſſure 'em we thought our ſelves as much marry'd, as if the Parſon had executed his holy Function; nevertheleſs we did not intend to neglect that Ceremony the very firſt Opportunity) and told her the Ambaſſador's Requeſt, and my Promiſe. She agreed with me in the Reaſonableneſs of it, but yet could not forbear ſhedding Floods of Tears at our (we hoped) ſhort Separation. The next Day was deſign'd for their Journey; but the enſuing Night was ſpent with Sighs, Tears, and a Lowneſs of Spirit that look'd ominous. Yet we parted; and for ſeveral Hours I could not bring my Mind to any peaceable Form to wait on the Ambaſſador: But he ſent for me at laſt, and told me the Reaſon of his deſiring me to continue with him was this:—

The King his Maſter had commanded him to make ſome Obſervation of the Cuſtoms and Manners of this Part of *Africa*; and, added he, I have obſerved in you a Capacity fit to aſſiſt me in the Deſign. I told him he might command me in any thing that lay in my Power, and that I took it for an Honour he would think me worth his Employment.

We

We had Notice the next Day from the Perſon that attended my Wife with the Camels, that he ſaw them ſafe on board, which gave me ſome Comfort. I begg'd he Ambaſſador to give me Leave to ſpeak a Word or two with one of the Slaves that the Emperor gave him. He ordered him to come before him, where I deſir'd he would tell me how he came into the Hands of the *Moors*. He was prodigiouſly ſurpriz'd to ſee me there, and could hardly believe his Eyes; for it was thought by every Body that I had either been kill'd or drown'd; as indeed it was very improbable to think otherwiſe. He inform'd us, that three Days after the *Succeſs* parted with the *Spaniſh* Man of War, another *Algerine* Rover met with them, and took them after an obſtinate Fight; the Captain and ſeveral others being ſlain in the Battle. It was his good Fortune to be bought for the Emperor's Uſe; I call it good Fortune, ſaid he, becauſe I was preſented to the *French* Ambaſſador, and am now in Hopes of my Freedom.

I told the Ambaſſador in *French* what he ſaid; and he was pleas'd to ſay, that to oblige me he would take him into his Protection. I remember'd *Mahumet ben Adda Otar* was Ambaſſador in *England*; He came to viſit the Ambaſſador often, and underſtanding *Engliſh*, I gather'd ſeveral good Hints for his Deſign; for he was courteous enough, tho' an Enemy in his Heart to the *Engliſh*.

I think it will not be much amiſs here to give the Reader a ſuccinct Account of the Cuſtoms and Manners of the *Moors* of *Fez* and *Morocco*; and we will firſt begin from their laſt Revolution.

Muley Iſmael, the preſent Emperor of *Morocco*, pretends to derive his Birth from *Mahomet* himſelf. He was Son to *Muley Xerif*, King of *Taphilet*, but was ſucceeded by *Muley Archyd*, who dy'd with a Debauch he made among his Courtiers

His

His unexpected Death in 1672 gave room for many of his Family to raiſe Rebellion in their ſeveral Provinces: But *Muley Ismael* being the greateſt Favourite of the People, and of an enterpriſing Temper, proclaim'd himſelf King of *Taphilet*, and ſeiz'd his Brother's Treaſures, which are the Sinews of War. His Nephew, *Muley Hamet*, gave him the moſt Trouble; for he had gain'd a Party, and declar'd himſelf King of *Sus* and *Morocco*, had ſeveral Battles, but at laſt was overcome as well as the reſt, and *Ismael* was ſettled the peaceful King of *Taphilet*, *Morocco*, and *Fez*. I have given a Deſcription of his Perſon already. His Empire ſpreads from North to South four hundred Leagues; from Eaſt to Weſt upwards of a hundred and fifty.

There are three ſtrong Places poſſeſs'd by the *Europeans* on the Coaſt of *Africa*. Firſt, *Mogazan* on the Ocean, by the *Portugueſe*; and on the *Mediterranean*, *Meliſſa* and *Ceuta* by the *Spaniards*. They had two more ſtrong Holds, *Larache* and *Mammora*; but the preſent Emperor drove them out ſhamefully. And *Tangier* once belong'd to the *Engliſh*, who abandon'd it a few Years ago, firſt demoliſhing the Fortifications.

The Emperor has but nine Sea-Ports in his whole Dominions, viz. *Sancta Cruz*, *Safy*, *Sallee*, *Mammora*, *Larache*, *Arzilla*, and *Tangier*, on the *Afric* Ocean; *Zaffarina*, and *Tetuan*, on the *Mediterranean*; tho' *Tetuan* is two Leagues within Land. To begin in Order as they are nam'd; *Sancta Cruz* (or the *Holy Croſs*) is the firſt Port to the Southward. The Town is about a Mile in Length, and a Quarter broad. The chief Merchants are *Jews*, who trade with *England* and *Holland*. Their Vent is Hides, Dates, Copper, and Bees-wax.

Safy or *Sophia*, appears next, a Town ſituate on a Hill; but drives a larger Trade than *Sancta Cruz*.

Sallee, ſituated 35 Leagues S. W. of *Cape Spartel*. It is divided into two Towns, the old and the new; it

is called by the Natives *Arbat*. There's a very good Harbour, and a ſtrong Caſtle well ſtor'd with Guns, if the *Moors* knew how to make uſe of them. The Town is large, and well inhabited, but the Walls are all demoliſh'd. I obſerv'd the Ruins of a Church, the Steeple yet ſtanding, a noble fine *Gothic* Building. The chief Trade of this Town conſiſts in the Prizes that are brought in by their Gallies.

About ſeven Leagues more to the North ſtands *Mamora*, once poſſeſſed by the *Spaniards*. It ſtands in a Bottom ſurrounded with Mountains, which renders the Air very unwholſome, by reaſon of the exceſſive Heat; but the Bay is fine, large, and ſecure from all Winds. This Town is generally the high Road to *Mequinez*, the preſent Capital of *Morocco*.

The next Port Northward is *Larache*, a Town of a pleaſant Situation, and ſtrongly fortify'd; but to the eternal Infamy of the *Spaniards* deliver'd up to *Iſmael* after a Siege of five Moons; two thouſand Soldiers and a hundred Officers taken Priſoners: a ſufficient Force to have defended it againſt the whole Powers of *Muly Iſmael*, for they neither wanted Proviſions nor Ammunition. But we ſhall leave them and their Cowardiſe, and go on to

Arzillah, or *Azilath* about twelve Leagues more North. A Place only fam'd for Tobacco, which they ſeldom trade abroad for, having ſufficient Vent for it among the Natives of *Morocco*; and as we have but little Buſineſs with it, we'll come to

Tangier as faſt as we can, a fine, large, well-fortified City, when in the Hands of the *Engliſh*; but ſince they have left it, and raz'd the Fortifications, the *Moors* have not thought fit to repair it.

The next, *Zaffarina*, is a Place of very little Note, and therefore we ſhall make no Obſervation concerning it.

The

The laſt is *Tetuan*, a Town ſix Miles within Land, without any Fortification. The Inhabitants came originally from the Province of *Andaluſia* in *Spain*, as indeed did moſt of the *Moors* on the Sea-Coaſts of *Africa*. They are white Men, pretty well civiliz'd, very kind to Strangers and Chriſtians, and pay but little Regard to the Emperor of *Morocco*.

As to the Nature of the Inhabitants, they are moſt of a tawny Complexion, of a lazy, idle Diſpoſition, and curs'd with all the Vices of Mankind; miſtruſtful to the laſt Degree, falſe, jealous, and the very Picture of Ignorance. They ſtyle themſelves *Muſſulmen*, or true Believers, yet their Word is not to be rely'd upon on any Occaſion. The *Moors* are generally but indifferent Soldiers, and but ſeldom brave. They are often fam'd in the *Spaniſh* Hiſtories for Men of Gallantry, but I could never find them inclin'd that way. They manage a Horſe, it muſt be confeſs'd, with a great deal of Dexterity. They abominate the Chriſtians, for the very Word ſignifies in their Language, *Dog*; and are continually ſeeking Means to deſtroy them. *Mahomet* has taught 'em in his *Alcoran*, that all of his Faith who die fighting againſt the Chriſtians, immediately enter into Paradiſe in Triumph; nay, even their Horſes, if they die in Battle, are immediately tranſlated into Heaven; for they hope to have the Pleaſure of Riding there, as well as on Earth.

Though Polygamy is allow'd, yet they muſt marry but four Wives, and muſt ſettle a Dowry upon them; and if they ever put them away, they muſt return their Dowry along with 'em: But they may keep as many Concubines as they think fit; tho' they have this Privilege, when they can pleaſe 'em no longer, they ſell 'em to the beſt Bidder; ſo that the Women of *Morocco*, in my Opinion, have but a ſad Time on't: yet the Husband is oblig'd to keep all their Children. They eſteem

Idiots

Idiots and Naturals to be Saints, if they are Men; for they believe the Women have no Souls, and are only form'd for Propagation. They will not allow 'em to enter their Moſques, becauſe they eſteem 'em uncapable of being receiv'd into Heaven: Yet they ſay their Prayers at home, and on *Fridays* reſort to the Places of Burial, to weep over the Graves of their deceas'd Friends, cloath'd in Blue, which is their Mourning. They hire profeſs'd Mourners to grieve and cry at the Graves of Relations, and howl over them, as I have heard the *Prieſts*; asking them, why they would die when they were provided with every thing that was neceſſary in this World. Their Time is ſpent in Eating, Drinking, Sleeping, Dallying with their Women, Horſes, and Prayers (for they never learn to read, and are forbid Gaming) and even their Prayers are hurried over ſo ſlothfully, as if they were aſleep.

They have uſually a String of Beads in their Hands, like the *Roman Catholicks*: and to every Bead they have a ſhort Prayer, which as they repeat, they drop through their Fingers. The Prayer conſiſts only in the different Attributes of God, as *God is great, God is good, God is infinite, God is merciful*. The Emperor of theſe Wretches only differs from his Subjects in a larger Propenſity to their ill Qualities, with the Addition of a degree of Cruelty and Avarice. I was told, that during his twenty Years Reign he had murder'd with his own Hands twenty three thouſand Men: Nay, I am apt to believe the Truth of it, for he put forty ſeven to Death in the one and twenty Days we were at his Court.

Every Nation is amaz'd to find his Subjects ſo ſubmiſſive and patient under ſo exceſſive and cruel a Tyranny: But they ſhould underſtand (bating their Want of Power) that they are taught to believe, if they fall by the Hand of a King who is a *Xerif*, (which ſignifies *Mahomet's* Suc-

Succeſſor) they immediately go up to Heaven; and if there is any that would not willingly be ſent to Heaven before their Time, they are ſure to fly him when he is cloath'd in Yellow, which is his Colour of Murder; and he generally dyes it of a Blood-colour before he goes to Sleep.

As I was viewing ſome new Buildings one Day, near the King's Palace, I perceiv'd him giving Directions to ſome of the Workmen. There were ſeveral Carts drove by his Slaves with Materials for his Building; and as they paſs'd him, he baſtinado'd ſome for going too faſt, while others, thinking to mend that Fault, were drubb'd by him for going too ſlow; one poor Creature trembling for fear of what would follow, went bowing before his Cart; but the Emperor wounding the Horſe in the Flank, he gave a Spring, tumbled the Wretch down, and drove over him. Another following him, ran to aſſiſt his Fellow, but the Emperor threw his Dart, and ſtruck him in the Shoulder. The Slave drew it out, and upon his Knees preſented it to him again, which the Emperor (when the Man had got ſome Diſtance from him) darted into his Chine. The Fool drew it out once more, and, cover'd with Blood, gave it to him back again; but as he was ſtooping, he fell down with loſs of Blood at the Barbarian's Feet, who did him the Favour to pin him to the Earth through his Back.

I was ſo ſhock'd at the Sight, that I could not recover my ſelf for a good while afterwards. I thought the poor Fellow was a Fool; for if it had been my own Caſe, I would have return'd it through his Body the ſame Time, for he was ſure of Dying, and I think it would have been ſome Satisfaction to have ſent the Author of my Death the ſame Journey.

This King us'd to murder his Slaves upon the leaſt Complaint from the *Moors*, which they would make out of hatred to Chriſtians. But the Wretch finding his

Slaves

Slaves decreaſe too much, took another Method; and when the next Complaint was made, he killed the Slave, the Perſon complain'd againſt, but order'd the Complainant immediately to pay him double the Price he coſt him, or find him two more Slaves in his Room that Inſtant, which he was oblig'd to do; but this Proceeding ſtopt their Mouths for the future.

They ſay he has a great deal of Wit and Courage, is very active, and expert in riding, and hurling the Dart. He drinks no Wine, becauſe his Religion forbids it: but when he takes Opium, or drinks a certain Mixture that he makes himſelf, compounded with Brandy, Cinamon, Cloves, Anniſeed, and Nutmegs, woe be to him that comes in his Way. He's much addicted to Women, having no leſs than four hundred Concubines. He has one hundred and eighteen Male Children alive, and about two hundred Females. One of the Males whom he deſigns for his Succeſſor, (and which he had by a Black, who adviſes him in every thing, and is reckon'd a politic Woman) he has named *Muley Zeyden*. His Revenue conſiſts in Preſents from the Governors of his Provinces, and the *Arabians* who live in Huts about his Dominions. When he has a mind to ſqueeze, he ſends for a Governor from his Province, who knows well enough what he is ſent to for, and therefore provides accordingly; ſo that the Emperor fleeces the Governors, and they fleece the People. So that there is no one rich but himſelf, and yet he does not know what Uſe to put his Treaſure to, but hides it in ſecret Places; and the Perſon that aſſiſts him in the Concealment is ſure to loſe his Life for his Aſſiſtance.

Mequinez, the Capital, and the Place of his Reſidence was formerly but a ſmall Village, but now it contains ſix hundred thouſand Inhabitants, and the Streets are ſo crowded, there's hardly any paſſing along. It is but a mean City, very ill built; and, if there falls any Rain, the

the dirtieſt Place I ever ſet my Foot in; for there is no Pavement in the Streets; and when it is dry the Duſt is ready to choak one. The King's Palace is indeed a very large Place, almoſt four Miles round, including his Gardens; but it is very ill contriv'd. Here you ſhall ſee a fine Pillar added to ſupport an old ruinated Place, and yet he employs moſt of his Time in Building. In ſhort, it looks like gold Lace upon a Hop-ſack.

His Stables are the moſt regular Building in all his Palace. But that's no wonder, for the *Moors* even reverence Horſes; and one that has been a Pilgrimage to *Mecca*, has as much Veneration as the Pilgrim himſelf. The King had one of theſe Horſes, which I have ſeen always finely capariſon'd, and a Slave to attend, who carry'd a Pot and a Cloth to keep him Clean. All the Horſes that are thus ſanctify'd are uſually freed from all manner of Service, and if the Owner cannot afford to keep it, which often happens, there is a Penſion ſettled upon 'em by the *Mufty*.

The *Jews* drive a great Trade here, but they pay ſufficiently for that Privilege; for they are oblig'd to wear black Caps, that they may be diſtinguiſh'd; and notwithſtanding their great Trade, they are but ſcurvily us'd, for if a Child inſults 'em, it is as much as their Lives are worth to reſiſt.

The Women of *Morocco*, I mean all that I had the Fortune to ſee, were very handſome, fine large full Eyes, round Faces, and every Feature exact. They are very amorous, and dexterous in contriving Methods to ſatisfy their Deſires.

A Gentleman of our Retinue told me, he had got an Intrigue with one of the *Mooriſh* Women, Daughter to a Governor of a Province; and his manner of going to the Appointment was in Diſguiſe. She ſent him by a *French* Slave of hers a complete Woman's Dreſs, which are generally all alike; and their Faces are all muffled

up

up to their Eyes, ſo that they are often met by their own Husbands in the Street, without being known; by this Dreſs he got Admittance as a Lady coming to pay a Viſit, and then they are very ſecure. For it is the Cuſtom, whenever a Man, even the Husband, finds a pair of Women's Sandals, at the Door of his Wife's Chamber, he muſt retire; for it is the greateſt Affront they can put on a Woman, to enter her Apartment when they have that Warning to the contrary. He told me ſhe was a delicious Creature, and Miſtreſs of the whole Art of Love. It is no wonder if they give themſelves up to Love, when perhaps there are twenty, or more, (according to the Capacity of the Perſon that keeps 'em) Sharers in one ſingle Man; and they muſt be contented to ſtay for due Benevolence, till their Tyrant pleaſes to ſend for 'em.

The Habit of the Men is generally White, (which is a Colour they extreamly delight in) with a red Cap on their Heads; that is the married Men; for all the Youth, from the Prince to the Beggar, before Wedlock, go uncover'd. They are cloſe ſhav'd under their Caps, excepting one Lock upon the Crown of their Heads, which they never cut off; being they are taught, by that Lock, *Mahomet* is to draw 'em up to their imaginary Paradiſe. They only ſhave under their Chins, but ſuffer their Beards and Muſtachoes to grow, which they take a particular Pride in the Length or Largeneſs of; and he that's well bearded, *muſt* be a wiſe Man.

Their Shirts are made like Shifts, only the Sleeves are ſo long that they hang down over their Hands. Under the Shirt they wear linen Drawers, that reach down to their Knees, for their Legs are always bare; their Shoes are made without Heels, like *Iriſh* Brogues. Over the Shirt is a Veſt without Sleeves, which they ſurround with a ſilk Scarf, of what Colour they pleaſe (except Green, which is a Colour ſacred to *Mahomet*, their

their Emperor, and the Clergy;) in this they thruſt ſhort Daggers, or Knives. Over all, is a Garment, which they call a *Hayick*, about five Ells long and four broad, which they wrap round 'em, as we do our Cloaks. Some of the meaner Sort, eſpecially in the Country, wear Straw hats of their own Make. Their Dreſſes are all a-like, only ſome add a gold or ſilver Fringe round the Border.

As for Religion, they riſe early and late to Prayers; but only like Children, do it becauſe they are order'd. Their *Mufti*, or Head of their Religion, is reckon'd the firſt in the Empire, and diſowns the Emperor's Authority; but yet he finds means to fleece him, as well as the reſt of his Subjects, who obey him out of Fear; for if there was one Perſon found to love him, it would be as ſtrange a Sight as one of their Monſters.

I could not forbear ſmiling to ſee the Providence of the *Moors*, Walking one Day about a Mile from *Mequinez*, it began to rain prodigiouſly; I got under a Tree to ſhelter my ſelf from the Tempeſt. But I obſerv'd ſeveral of the Natives undreſs themſelves with a great deal of Precipitation, make up their Cloaths in a Bundle, and ſit on 'em ſtark naked; and all their Care was to keep 'em from the Wet, leaving their naked Bodies expos'd to the Fury of the Storm. When it ceas'd, they walk'd a little Way till their Bodies were dry, and then dreſs'd themſelves. If a Man were to do ſo in *England*, he would be counted a Madman, or a Fool, yet I muſt own I thought 'em in the right; for be the Storm ever ſo violent, yet when it's over, they purſue their Journey with dry Cloaths on their Backs. But they have one Conveniency, they are dreſt and undreſt in half a Minute. Nay, I am inform'd, thoſe that travel on Camels, or on Horſeback, have a Conveniency cover'd with an oyl'd Cloth, in which they thruſt their Cloaths on the like Occaſion, and ride naked. I fancy, to meet an Army in a Storm would create

create a terrible Fright, and do as much Execution to an Ignorant Body, as their offenſive Arms, and force 'em to ſeek for Safety in their Heels.

The Emperor is able to raiſe an hundred thouſand Horſe, and fifty thouſand Foot. When they are to make War among themſelves, they go very unwillingly into the Field; but when they oppoſe the Chriſtians, they do it with a great deal of Chearfulneſs; becauſe they expect Indulgences for the Expiation of their Sins. When they are ready to give Battle, they range their Armies after this Manner. They divide their Horſe into two Bodies, and place one at each Wing; the Foot is in the Middle, ſo that the Whole forms a Creſcent or Half-Moon. Before they begin the Battle, they give a great Shout, then make a ſhort Prayer, and fall on without much Order very furiouſly; ſo that they ſoon overcome, or are as ſoon put to flight. Break but their foremoſt Ranks, and you put their whole Body into Confuſion.

I have ſaid before, that no Perſon is rich but the Emperor; neither do they take the Methods to be ſo; or if they are, their greateſt Wiſdom will be to conceal it; for if once known, they are ſure to loſe all their Wealth.

No Foreign Coin is current in *Morocco*, except *Spaniſh* Pieces of Eight, which are only receiv'd by Weight. But the *Jews* will ſecretly take any Coin, and I ſuppoſe diſpoſe of it again with the ſame Circumſpection they receive it. They have but three ſorts of Coin current among 'em. The firſt a *Ducat*, of *Barbary* Gold. Second a *Blanquile*, of *Silver*. And laſt a *Felouze*, of Copper. The Image of the Emperor is not allow'd to be put on their Money, being expreſly forbid by *Mahomet*, in his *Alcoran*; but they ſtamp 'em with *Arabian* Characters. Their way of reckoning is by the Ounce.

Theſe

These are the Heads of what I obſerv'd in my ſmall Stay among 'em. The Ambaſſador inform'd me, he was in ſome fear that his Embaſſy would not ſucceed; for he ſaid, he found little elſe but Delays, Excuſes, and nothing of Sincerity among 'em. We were inform'd, that the Emperor deſign'd to go ſpeedily upon an Expedition againſt the *Moors* of the Province of *Oran*, who had newly revolted, and put to Death their Governor for his Avarice; he having extorted from 'em vaſt Sums of Money; and the Inhabitants after his Death, choſe one of their own Province to command 'em. This haſten'd our Ambaſſador in his Legation, to get an Anſwer one way or other. But we were inform'd, the King deſign'd to ſet out the next Day upon his Expedition, and yet the Ambaſſador had not his Audience of Leave. This made him, and us, very uneaſy; for we could not ſtir from *Mequinez*, without the Emperor's expreſs Leave. But about ſeven in the Evening, the Ambaſſador had Orders to come and take his laſt Audience, which was the ninth of *June* 1693: We went in the ſame Manner, as we did at firſt. But we were inform'd by our Interpreter, that the King was in a very ill Humour, and that he had but an Hour before kill'd two of his chief Blacks, by ſtabbing 'em with a Dagger he continually wore at his Girdle.

We enter'd the Palace further than the firſt Time, where we waited a full half Hour. At laſt the Emperor approach'd richly dreſt, and finely mounted upon a white *Barbary*; the Saddle and other Accoutrements wrought with Gold and precious Stones in ſeveral Places. He was this Day in his Yellow, or Fatal Veſt, and ſprinkled in many Places with the Blood of thoſe he had ſlain; and I thought his Countenance had ſomething more of Horror in't, than at our firſt Audience. He had a Spear in his Hand, ſet round with Pearls on the Top, and a Cap with Oſtriches Feathers waving in the

Wind. All his Attendants had fled his Preſence, at the Notice of his having on his yellow Veſt; and he had only about a dozen of his Guards waiting upon him trembling, but the *Alcaydes* and other great Men crept about us during our Audience.

The Emperor begun with his old Compliment of *You're welcome*, but his Looks and his Words I thought did but ill agree. The Ambaſſador us'd many Arguments with him to bring his Embaſſy to a happy Iſſue, but to no Purpoſe. The Ambaſſador told me, the King was a Perſon that had not the leaſt Regard to his Word, and even diſown'd a Letter he had written to his Maſter the King of *France*. Therefore, ſaid he, we'll take our leave of this Country of Monſters in two Days: for the King had ſign'd his Depature, with all his Retinue.

I was very well pleas'd with this his Reſolution; for now I ſhould once more ſee that Treaſure of my Soul, whoſe Abſence had robb'd me of all Joy. I even thought theſe two Days the longeſt of my Life; but at laſt they were paſt, and we ſet out very merrily; at leaſt I did, and all the reſt of the Retinue. Tho' I muſt own I could not anſwer for the Ambaſſador, for I believe the ill Succeſs of his Embaſſy had a little chagrin'd him. I did my utmoſt Endeavour to divert his Melancholy upon the Road, which he took very kindly. We lay in Tents the firſt Night, which the Ambaſſador had taken care to provide us, and Proviſion likewiſe; for there is never an Inn between *Mequinez* and *Mammora*.

We roſe the next Day very early, that we might avoid the Heat of the Sun. When we came within a League of the Town, we ſaw coming towards us our *Italian*, and by the Melancholy in his Looks, I began to tremble with Apprehenſion of ſome Accident. Aſſoon as he approach'd us, after paying his Obedience to the Ambaſſador, he addreſs'd himſelf to me. Said he, in *French*,

I wiſh ſome one elſe would have taken my Commiſſion upon 'em, for what I have to tell you will cut you to the Heart. The various Troubles in my Breaſt lock'd up my Tongue, ſo that I had not Power to ask him any Queſtions. In ſhort, ſaid he, your Miſtreſs is forc'd away from us, through the Treachery of *Muſtapha*. At hearing this fatal News, I drop'd ſenſeleſs from my *Camel*, nor came to my ſelf till we arriv'd at *Mammora*. I was a thouſand times going to deſtroy my ſelf; and I believe I had done it in the height of my Deſpair, if I had not been withheld. In ſhort, the Ambaſſador was no longer ignorant of my cruel Loſs: For in my Ravings, I had call'd her my dear Wife. He ſeem'd amaz'd at the Diſcovery, and reproach'd me in a handſome Manner, for not truſting him with the Secret. I was not in a Condition to beg his Pardon, neither was there any one could give me Comfort. I was carry'd on Board, where I enquired in what manner ſhe was taken away.

The Captain inform'd us, that *Muſtapha* had made his Eſcape out of the Cabin Window, by ſwimming. I did not tell any one of it, ſaid the Captain, becauſe I thought it would be to no Purpoſe; for I imagin'd there could be no other ill Conſequence to attend his Eſcape, but meerly the Loſs of him. He had been gone three Days, when on the fourth there came on Board us the Governor of *Mammora*, the Fugitive *Muſtapha*, and one hundred Soldiers, who immediately ſeiz'd on the young Gentleman, who they ſaid was a Woman, and Wife to a Renegado of *Sallee*. It was in vain to oppoſe 'em, eſpecially when I found by her Breaſts, that ſhe was really a Woman. They took her on Shore, notwithſtanding all her Cries, Shrieks and Lamentations, which pierc'd our very Hearts. They put her on Board a *Saick*, and ſet Sail immediately, ſteering South, as we ſuppoſe to the Port of *Sallee*. This Gentleman, (meaning the

Italian) took it upon him to acquaint you with the unhappy Accident; but, added he, I believe it is not poſſible to regain her. The Ambaſſador was ſo good as to offer his Aſſiſtance, in what lay in his Power. I begg'd he would be pleas'd to lend me a Boat, with ſome Hands to work her. He very willingly granted my Requeſt; and told me, he would lend me the Ship, but he fear'd it might occaſion a more publick Quarrel.

He lent me ten Hands, four Patareros, and ſufficient ſmall Arms, with every thing that was neceſſary. My kind *Italian* would accompany me, and the reſt of the Company went Voluntary. We ſpent but little time in fitting out; and the Wind proving favourable, we ſet Sail, and made very good Way. The *Saick* had not purſu'd her Voyage above five Hours before us, ſo that we had hopes of getting up with 'em. I encourag'd my Companions, who labour'd inceſſantly. We ſail'd and row'd all Night, and when the Morning dawn'd, we gain'd Sight of a Veſſel, which we did not doubt was that we ſought for. We labour'd hard to come up with her, and gain'd upon her every Moment. Before eight a-clock we came a long ſide of her, and I ſoon diſcover'd *Muſtapha* giving Orders about the Engagement. I drew out a pair of Piſtols, and ſhot him dead. The reſt fir'd upon us, but notwithſtanding all their Oppoſition, I jump'd into their Veſſel, follow'd by the *Italian* and five more of the Men: And tho' they were ſuperior in Number, yet we ſoon made 'em ask for Quarter. I upon the Inſtant enquir'd for her that was always in my Thoughts; but, to my great Grief, was inform'd by an *Engliſh* Slave at the Oar, that ſhe was taken on Board of a Galley by Captain *Hamet*, our *Iriſh* Renegado; and they aſſured me, it was impoſſible for 'em to be overtaken. Unſpeakable was the Sorrow I felt, at this Relation; and all the Satisfaction I felt was, that I had rewarded *Muſtapha* for his Treachery.

We

We ſteer'd our Courſe back, but I was more dead than alive in the Voyage.

When we came on Board, the Ambaſſador condol'd with me for my Misfortune, and entreated me to take Comfort. I told him Death was now my only Comfort, and I hop'd he was not far off.

Our *Italian* had agreed for his Paſſage on board a Veſſel in the Bay, bound for *Rome:* He begg'd that I would accompany him into *Italy*; and when he had ſettled his Affairs, he would (if it lay in his Power) come back to *Sallee*, and do his Endeavour to find what was become of Mrs. *Villars*. I thank'd him for his Offer, and told him I would accept of it. I had Effects enough, having all the Money and Jewels we brought from *Hamet*'s Country-Houſe. We took leave of the Ambaſſador, and gave him abundance of Thanks for his Civilities, and went on board the Veſſel that waited for us; we ſet Sail immediately, and in two Months ſafely arriv'd at *Rome*; where our *Italian* did not care to go publickly on Shore, but ſtay'd till the Darkneſs of the Night favour'd our Landing.

We had all our Goods diſembark'd, and took a Private Lodging in an obſcure Part of the City, where we were ſure of being conceal'd. We ask'd our Landlord, (who was a *Frenchman*) about the News of the Place. He told us a great deal of idle ſtuff, which ſignify'd nothing to us; at laſt, by the Advice of the *Italian*, I enquir'd of him, if *Hernando Alvares* were in Town, or no? He anſwer'd me, that he had been dead above two Months, and had left a noble Eſtate behind him. I ask'd him if he had not left a Wife to poſſeſs it. No, ſaid he.

About three Years ago (continu'd our Landlord) he was to have been marry'd to a beautiful young Lady, an Heireſs to a vaſt Fortune; but his Brother ſtept in between, and gain'd her Affection. Some ſay they

were marry'd, and others not; but ſhe was deliver'd of a fine Boy. Don *Hernando* took a barbarous Revenge of his Brother, as it is reported: He brib'd a Captain of a Veſſel to put a Weight about his Neck, and drown him in the Sea. But to make amends for this inhuman Act, he has left his vaſt Eſtate to the Son his Brother had by the Lady, and has choſen his Holineſs the *Pope* for his Guardian. Pray, ſaid I, what's become of the young Lady? He anſwer'd me he could not tell; but it is ſuppos'd ſhe was gone into a Nunnery.

The *Italian*, while our Diſcourſe laſted, had turn'd his Face to the Window, that we might not perceive the Diſorder of his Countenance. Aſſoon as our Landlord was gone, he turn'd to me, and embrac'd me; ſaid he, My dear Friend, let what will happen to me, I ſhall have it in my Power to ſerve you with my Fortune; and ſo much I think my ſelf obliged to you, that if half will buy your Miſtreſs's Liberty, you ſhall command it. I return'd him the Acknowledgments his kind Proffer deſerv'd, but told him, I could not expect to be ſo happy. He bid me not deſpair. I begg'd he would not mention any thing of my Affairs, till his own came to a lucky Iſſue.

The next Day, we procur'd our ſelves Habits after the Mode of *Rome*, and reſolv'd to go to *Grimaldi*'s Country-Houſe, to hear, if it were poſſible, ſome Tidings of *Iſabella*.

Antonio had dreſt himſelf in a mean Habit, and appear'd as my Servant. It being but ſix pleaſant Miles, we had reſolv'd to walk it. We enter'd a Village within half a Mile of the Place, and reſolv'd to dine at a poor Inn, there to gain ſome Intelligence. I went for a *French* Merchant, and Don *Antonio* paſs'd (as I ſaid) for my Servant, and Interpreter, and inform'd me of the Diſcourſe that paſt between 'em. That Gentleman,

tleman, (meaning me) ſays he to our Hoſt, has ſome Buſineſs to communicate to Don *Antonio Grimaldi*, (for we knew of his being there.) Our Inkeeper told us, it would be a difficult Matter to talk to him about Buſineſs now, for he was that very Evening going to ſet out with his Daughter, in order to put her into a Nunnery at *Naples*; for all his Perſuaſions (added he) cannot prevail upon her, but ſhe is fixt unalterably in her Reſolution: This News, you may be ſure, haſten'd our Departure; but we did not well know how to diſcloſe the Secret we had to unfold.

Don *Antonio*, as not doubting *Iſabella*'s Affection to him, was fearful leſt an abrupt Diſcovery ſhould have ſome ſtrange Effect upon her: We therefore reſolv'd, that I ſhould firſt appear and break the Matter by degrees; for he had inform'd me that ſhe ſpoke *French* very well. When we approach'd the Houſe, *Antonio* ſtood at ſome Diſtance, while I went up to the Door alone. The Porter and I not underſtanding one another, I had like to have return'd as wiſe as I came. But at laſt a Servant in the Family happening to underſtand *French*, came and ended our ſputt'ring at one another. I inform'd him I had a Secret of the greateſt Importance to declare to *Donna Iſabella*. He told me he would acquaint his Lord with it. The Servant went in, and immediatcly return'd with a grave old Gentleman, that ſeem'd to have been weeping. He ask'd me in *French* what I had to ſay to his Daughter, for ſhe did not care to ſpeak to any one. I begg'd that I might be brought to her Preſence, and did not doubt but that I had ſomething to ſay to her which would not diſpleaſe her. Don *Antonio Grimaldi* gravely ſmil'd, and ſhook his Head; No, no, Sir, ſaid he; you have nothing to give either her or me Comfort, unleſs you could revive the Dead. I anſwered him, he did not know what I could do. But I told him, the longer

he delay'd me seeing her, the longer he deferr'd their own Happiness. Well, said he, I have no Hopes; but you shall see my Daughter, to convince you that nothing in this World can make us Happy.

He led me through several stately Apartments all hung with Black. And though it was high Noon, yet the Sun's Light was excluded, and dim twinkling Lamps usurp'd his Room. At last we enter'd a Chamber, where sat the fair Forlorn. I stop'd a Moment to behold her, and notwithstanding a fixt Melancholy on her Countenance, Beauty triumph'd there. She was caressing an Infant she had in her Arms. The Father enter'd first, and told her in *French*, that a Gentleman of *France* had a Secret to communicate to her, that would banish her Melancholy. The Gentleman (return'd the Lady) may promise Impossibilities, but rather than to expose him, I would beg him not to open his Mouth upon that Subject. Madam, said I, I own my self a Physician, but I pretend to cure the Mind as well as the Body, and to acquaint you with what you know already, you mourn the Loss of a Gentleman, that you imagine was drown'd at Sea: But I can assure you he escap'd that Danger, and is now a Captive in *Barbary*, pining under the severest Want; and all the Hope he has of Freedom, is through your Means.

The Lady upon this look'd wishfully upon her Father, and said, Dear Father, don't endeavour to deceive me any longer; you know I have your Promise, and my Time's expir'd. My dear Child, I am amaz'd as much as you can be, return'd the Father; for by all that's Holy, I never saw this Gentleman in my Life before, and am so far from believing him, that, (begging his Pardon) I fancy there must be some very great Mistake in't. Upon this I related to them all his Story, from the beginning, to our meeting in *Barbary*.

I found

I found my Relation had ſtagger'd her Faith a little, for a pleaſing Hope, rectify'd by powerful Fear, roſe in her beautiful Face; and ſhe threw her ſelf at my Feet, notwithſtanding all my Endeavours to the contrary. Dear Sir, ſaid ſhe, do not ſhow me this Light of Comfort, to put it out, and plunge me into eternal Darkneſs. Madam, ſaid I, by Heaven, and heavenly Powers, I have ſeen him within theſe two Months, and what I have related to you, his own Mouth inform'd me; and having gain'd my Liberty, I made him a Promiſe to ſee his Friends in *Italy*, and inform them of his Condition. The Tranſports and Ecſtaſies that took Poſſeſſion of both their Souls cannot be expreſs'd by Words; they embrac'd me, kiſs'd me, call'd me their Preſerver. Unlook'd-for Happineſs! (ſaid *Isabella*) Heaven, thou haſt heard my Prayers! and does my dear *Antonio* live! I'll immediately imbark for *Barbary*, and fetch him thence my ſelf: Even all that I am worth, my precious Boy ſhall ſell his Fortune too, to redeem his Father. O my young *Antonio*, Heaven has reſtor'd thy Father from the Dead, (ſaid ſhe to her Child) and I hope we ſhall ſee him again. The pretty Innocent mingled his Tears of Joy with theirs. After their firſt Tranſports were over, they again embrac'd me, and begg'd I would put 'em in a way to pay me the Obligations they ow'd me. Then they proceeded to enquire which way they muſt go about to accompliſh his Liberty. I told 'em, I had a Servant waiting without, that I intended ſhould accompany the Perſons they would ſend to manage the Affair. They ſeem'd to reproach me for letting him wait without, and were immediately ſending for him in. I begg'd they would give me leave to go for him my ſelf, being he was a Foreigner, and they would find it a hard matter to make him underſtand them. Upon this I ran out, and call'd to *Antonio*, and told him in few Words how things ſtood.

He follow'd me close at the Heels: I went into the Room first, and as *Antonio Grimaldi* was giving him his Hand to lead him in, he fell upon his Knees before him. *Isabella* casting her Eyes upon him, gave a Shriek, and cry'd out, 'Tis he! 'tis he himself! my dear *Antonio!* Joy took away her Speech, and she fell down in a Trance. He ran and caught her in his Arms, kiss'd and embrac'd her, and at last brought her to herself. Imagination must make up the Discourse between 'em. He told her at last, when Words of Sense took Place, that he was obliged to me for his Liberty; for he had sent several Letters to his Sisters, but never could get any Answer. They inform'd him, that both his Sisters were gone to reside at *Venice* with their Husbands, and that was the Reason his Letters never came to their Hands. Now, said *Antonio*, if my Friend (meaning me) was but happy, it would compleat my Joy. But to find a Wife, a Son, and Father kind, when I had many Reasons to think the contrary, must have some Alloy, or it would not be possible for me to bear it.

Antonio upon this related my unhappy Story, and they all lamented my hard Fortune. He afterwards enquir'd of his dear *Isabella* concerning her own Sufferings. Which she readily began.

Said she, that Day you left me, the Troubles of my Mind wrought so much upon my Body, that the Physicians declar'd I was in a violent Fever, and advis'd my Father to send me into the Country, which he accordingly did the next Day. The Thoughts of being so far from my dear *Antonio* encreas'd my Malady, and my Father had little Hopes of my Life. My Fever, after having brought me to the brink of the Grave, left me: And my Father imagining it was the approaching Marriage had wrought this sudden Illness, told me one Day, that if it was that which lay so heavy upon my Spirits, he would remove it, by giving

me

me the Power of refuſing to be the Wife of *Hernando Alvarez*. I thank'd him, and told him he had taken the only way to reſtore my Health; and that if I was forc'd to wed him, I ſhould be for ever miſerable. He was the tendereſt of Fathers, and inform'd me he would never force my Inclinations. The Kindneſs my Father ſhew'd me work'd ſo much upon me, that I began to recover.

Your Brother us'd often to viſit me in my Illneſs, which retarded my Health. My Father ſeeing it would never be in my Power to like him, very frankly told him ſo, and begg'd that he would diſcontinue his Viſits; for he was reſolv'd his Daughter ſhould never give her Hand, where it was not in her Power to give her Heart. They parted with many Words between them, but my Father perſiſted in his Reſolution.

I began to diſcover that I was with Child, and a new Sort of an Illneſs ſeiz'd me. I knew this was an Accident that could not long be conceal'd, therefore I reſolv'd to let you know my Condition; and I gain'd my Woman, by ſeveral Promiſes of a Reward, to deliver a Letter to you: But ſhe betray'd me to your Brother, which I ſuſpected from her not appearing. I therefore declar'd the Truth to my indulgent Father. He was very much enrag'd at the Diſcovery; but paternal Love prevailing over his Paſſion, he forgave me, and promis'd to make me happy with my dear *Antonio*. Theſe Promiſes made my Sickneſs vaniſh, and I had no other Diſeaſe but what attends breeding Women. My Father went to *Rome* to enquire for *Don Antonio*, but could not get the leaſt Information of him. This gave me a new Shock. But what bitter Agonies did I feel, when I receiv'd a Letter from your Brother, with a Copy of that I had written to you enclos'd; which was as follows.

Ungrateful

UNgrateful Woman! Yet I will no more upbraid thee, but let thy Crime be thy Punishment. He that betray'd me I will not call by the Name of Brother: He has paid for his Ingratitude with his Life. I only give thee this Notice, that thou may'st feel some of those Pangs thou hast thrust into the Breast of

Hernando Alvarez.

The Reading of this Letter sunk me down, and I call'd for Death, as my last and only Hope. I resolv'd to refuse all Food, and had starv'd my self to Death, if a good Priest had not convinc'd me by his Arguments my Soul was in Danger, and I should be guilty of a double Murder, my self, and Infant. I lingred on in a restless State of Unhappiness, till the Time of my Delivery came, which I pray'd to Heaven to end with my Life: But it pleas'd the Almighty Power to spare me to be happy.

The Sight of my precious Infant call'd to Mind the Loss of his Father; but I resolv'd to banish all Thoughts of Death, that I might take Care of his tender Years. But I begg'd my Father to give me leave to go into a Nunnery. With much Importunity he granted my Request, on this Condition, that if I continued in that Mind at the End of two Years, I might do as I thought fit. Tho' I thought the Time an Age, yet I unwillingly consented.

My Father us'd Means with the *Pope*, to have your Brother call'd to an Account for your Death; and it had gone hard with him, if we could have procur'd any Witnesses; but for Want of that he was acquitted. In a little time a heavy and deep Melancholy seiz'd him; and he profess'd so sincere a Repentance, that even I almost forgave him. He begg'd he might see the

the Child; which my Father made me comply with. He ſhed ſuch abundance of Tears over it, that my Father wept for Company; and ſpoke ſo tenderly of the Loſs of his Brother, that wip'd off all Suſpicions of his Repentance. Since thou haſt loſt a Father, ſaid he, through my Barbarity, it is but juſt that I ſhould prove a Father to thee. He frequently came to ſee him, though I could never be prevail'd upon to accept of a Viſit. At laſt his Grief ſeiz'd him ſo violently, that he was given over by his Phyſicians. When he was upon his Death-Bed, he made his Will, and bequeath'd my little *Antonio* his whole Eſtate; leaving the Pope his Guardian. He dy'd full of Repentance for his Crime, and no doubt his Soul took her Flight to Heaven.

The generous *Antonio* could not refuſe ſome Tears to the Memory of his repentant Brother; but Joy ſucceeded Sorrow. The *Pope* was acquainted with the Story, who ſent to congratulate their happy Meeting. Nothing but Mirth and Pleaſure ran through the *Villa*; which increas'd my Sorrow.

Don Antonio told me one Day, that he did not think he had a Right to rejoice without me; and now, ſaid he, I have nothing to afflict me but what you feel, therefore will bend my Thoughts if it be poſſible to relieve your Grief. I can procure a Fryar of my Acquaintance to go to *Sallee*, one that knows the Nature of the Buſineſs we ſhall ſend him about, being he has often gone to redeem Captives: We'll ſend for him, and you may give him what Inſtructions you think fit. I thank'd him, and was very ſorry for the Trouble I ſhould give him, but was reſolv'd to accompany him my ſelf. He told me he would not have me go by any means, for I could be of no manner of Uſe in the Affair, but rather a Hindrance; and if I ſhould be once diſcovered, might fall into the ſame State we both lately eſcap'd from; and perhaps meet with much worſe

Uſage

Uſage than I had before. His Advice was ſo reaſonable, that I reſolv'd to take it, whatever Violence I did my ſelf. The Fryar was ſent for, had his Commiſſion and Inſtructions given him, and withal to ſpare no Coſt. *Antonio* told him whatever he gave ſhould not be thought unreaſonable.

He was to have a thouſand Crowns for his Expences, and two thouſand more if he ſucceeded.

The Fryar undertook his Voyage with a great deal of Alacrity, and gave us great Hopes of his Succeſs by his Willingneſs; and he embark'd the next Day for *Genoa*, that Port being the propereſt Place to get a Veſſel for *Barbary*. We wiſh'd him a good Voyage, and recommended him to Fortune.

Don Antonio did all he could to divert my Melancholy: We often went a hunting, ſhooting, fiſhing, and viſiting the Ladies. In ſhort, he made me partake in all the Diverſions *Italy* could afford. But though I ſeem'd often to be diverted, yet I had always my Condition too much at Heart to be merry. We view'd all the Rarities and Antiquities of ancient and modern *Rome*. I muſt confeſs, theſe Amuſements lull'd my Sorrows often, but when I had Time for Reflection they ruſh'd upon me with the greater Force.

I ſhall not trouble my Reader in deſcribing Places treated on by Pens far above my weak Capacity; but only give a ſhort Deſcription of *Naples*, whither *Don Antonio* would have me go. I was not much averſe to the Journey, though a pretty long one; and we ſet out with a very handſome Equipage. *Donna Iſabella*, with her little Son, accompany'd us; but *Don Antonio Grimaldi* was oblig'd to attend the *Pope*, to ſettle the Affairs of his Son in-law's Eſtate. I was oblig'd to appear chearful, if it was but in Complaiſance to *Don Antonio*.

We arriv'd at *Naples* in three Days, without meeting any thing extraordinary upon the Road. Certainly,

ly, never any City in the World can boaſt a finer Situation: Add to that, their Buildings are ſumptuous, every private Houſe ſeems a Palace, and every Palace looks like the Court of a King: The Streets ſpacious; a mild Air and free from Tempeſts; ſtrong, both by Art and Nature. In ſhort, if I was obliged to live out of my native Country, (which every Man is fond of) *Naples* ſhould be the only Place. It has a Wall kept in very good Repair, with three Caſtles almoſt impregnable. The chief is ſeated on Mount *Eraſmus*, ſo call'd from a Chapel dedicated to him: But if it is *Eraſmus Roterdamus*, I can't imagine how the *Roman Catholicks* came to have ſuch a particular Regard for him, when it is very well known he was no great Friend to them; at leaſt he was a Scourge to their Abſurdities in his Writings.

This is not only a Safeguard to the City and adjacent Country, but might prove its Scourge. In 1587 it was blown up by Lightning, penetrating to the Powder-Room, which mightily damag'd the whole City. The ſecond is *Caſtello nuevo*, or the new Caſtle, built by *Charles*, King of *Naples*. This Caſtle commands the Haven, and is generally the Viceroy's Dwelling. The third ſtands on the South-eaſt Corner of the City, built upon a little Rock, join'd to the Continent by *Lucullus* the *Roman*, and is ſometimes call'd by his Name, but oftner *Caſtello del Ovo*, or the Caſtle of the Egg, from its Form. They have alſo a fine Arſenal for their Gallies, very well kept, and furniſh'd with great Store of Ammunition. But I think the Mole the moſt extraordinary Piece of Work, being it defends the Haven from the ſtormy South; lin'd of each Side, and pav'd on the Top with noble ſquare Stones, and in the middle a fine large Fountain of Marble; the whole Extent is five hundred Paces, and ten in Breadth. The Inhabitants often boaſt of the Antiquity of their City, founded

twenty

twenty Years after *Troy*'s Deſtruction, and call'd by the ancient Poets *Parthenope*, which *Virgil* does ſufficiently teſtify in his *Georgics*:

Illo Virgilium me Tempore dulcis alebat
Parthenope, *ſtudiis florentem ignobilis oti.*

This City has ſuffer'd many Revolutions, but none more extraordinary than that in 1640, when a poor Fiſherman, without Shoes to his Feet, in five Days time commanded the whole Power of *Naples*; and might have liv'd in that Grandeur, if his Mind had chang'd with his exalted State; but he was ſtill a Fiſherman. His ſhort-liv'd Fire blaz'd too fierce to laſt, and he fell a Victim to the Rage he himſelf began.

Their Churches are noble Structures, and beauti. fy'd with Paintings by the beſt Hands. Their Women are moſt of 'em beautiful, but my Heart had no Room to think of them.

The City is govern'd by very wholſome Laws, but one particular Article adds much to the Quiet of it; none are ſuffer'd to wear Swords but thoſe of the Garriſons; ſo if there's any Rencounter in the Streets, a Bout at Fiſty-Cuffs generally ends the Diſpute: Tho' Bravo's are to be hir'd to do a Murder here as cheap as at *Rome*, and Men of Honour too; for we heard of a Quarrel between two *Neapolitan* Gentlemen, where one, according to Cuſtom, hir'd a Bravo to murder the other, and gave him his Reward beforehand, But it ſo fell out, that ſome Friends to both Parties reconcil'd the two Gentlemen. The Perſon that had bargain'd with the Bravo for the Job, ſent to him, and told him of their Reconcilement, but that he might keep the Money. The other told him it was not in his Power to return it him, but he was above receiving Money without doing his Work, and therefore the Gentleman muſt of ne-

neceſſity ſuffer Death. He intreated him, and us'd many Arguments, but all to no purpoſe. When he found nothing would prevail, he told him he would immediately acquaint the Gentleman with his Deſign, which he did accordingly. Notwithſtanding, the Bravo the ſame Evening found his Opportunity, and left the other Gentleman for dead upon the *Mole*; tho' he recover'd after a lingring Illneſs. But the Bravo had the Impudence to go to the other (when he found the Gentleman was in a fair way of Recovery) and told him he begg'd his Pardon that he had not been as good as his Word, but he would take Care and mend his Hand very quickly. In ſhort, he was found ſo reſolute in the Matter, that the Gentleman was oblig'd to hire another of the ſame Trade to give him a Caſt of his Office, and diſpatch the Bravo before he could execute what was deſign'd; and the next Day he was found dead at the very Door of the Gentleman's Houſe he had intended to aſſaſſinate; waiting, as it was ſuppos'd, for an Opportunity to do his Buſineſs.

After we had view'd every thing within the City, we went to ſee the much-fam'd *Veſuvius*, or the burning Mountain, a League and a half Eaſt of the City. The *Neapolitans* call it the Bed-chamber of the Sun, becauſe it appears to them firſt from the Top of that Mountain. Round the Bottom of it is the richeſt Spot of Ground in the Univerſe, I'll not except even the Mines of *Potoſi*; for the yearly Vintage produces twelve hundred thouſand Ducats. The Middle of the Hill is very pleaſantly ſhaded with Cheſnut, and ſeveral other Fruit-Trees. The Mountain has a double Top; that to the North terminates in a Plain finely cultivated: The other towards the South, which is the *Volcano*, riſes much higher.

When we had gain'd the Summit, we deſcended gradually into its Bowels, by large Steps cut on purpoſe.

poſe. It has, in Times paſt, done much Damage to the Country round it, by its ſudden Eruptions; but now it forebodes nothing but Rain, when the Top is envelop'd with Clouds.

When we had ſufficiently ſatisfy'd our Curioſities at *Naples*, we took a Tour to *Putzol*, or *Poſuolo*, through a hollow Rock, a Mile in Length, and no other Light but what came in at both Ends, and one in the Middle from the Top of the Rock. This ſubterraneous Paſſage is paved with Stone all through, and the narroweſt Part of it is ten Yards over. About the Middle is a ſmall Chapel dedicated to the Virgin *Mary*. We viſited all the Rarities of the Place, particularly *Virgil*'s Tomb, which is almoſt cover'd with Ivy. They told me of a Laurel Tree that ſprouted naturally out of it, but (not to take from that incomparable Man whoſe Works are ever-living Laurels) I could not ſee any ſuch thing. We alſo view'd the Lake *Agnano*, ſo call'd from the Multitude of Serpents or Snakes that fall into it from the pendent Mountains. The Water is of two different Qualities; that taſted upon the Surface is ſweet or freſh, but that taken deeper is of a brackiſh Taſte, ſuppos'd from ſome Minerals that inviron it.

On the South Side of the Lake ſtands a natural Stove, which is call'd St. *German*'s *Stove*; but we had not Curioſity enough to enter it, nor Faith enough to believe a ridiculous Fable that is told concerning it, (tho' it is reported a Saint declar'd it for a Truth) which I ſhall put down here, and leave my Reader to judge of it himſelf. St. *German* was adviſed to repair to this Stove, to cure him of a dangerous Malady: When he came there, he found the Soul of a very pious Man that he knew, tormented with the Heat of the Place. St. *German*, as underſtanding the Language of Souls, ask'd him, how ſo good a Man as he was in his Life-time, came to be condemn'd to ſuch a ſevere Puniſhment.

The

The Soul very civilly anſwer'd him, that it was for ſiding with *Laurentius*, who oppos'd *Symmachus* in the Popedom; but he was convinc'd that his Prayers would fetch him out of that Hot-houſe. St. *German* pray'd heartily, you may be ſure, and got the Soul of the Man from out thence; but where it went after, no one could tell. But the Place was call'd ever after St. *German*'s *Stove*.

To the Eaſt of the bordering Mountain is a Place they call the Cave of Death; for whatever thing of Life ventures to the farther End, they ſay immediately drops down dead: Tho' a Perſon that liv'd in a Neighbouring Village ventur'd in often for a Reward. When he came out again he was all of a Sweat, and hardly able to ſtand for five or ſix Minutes. When he had recover'd himſelf, he took a Dog out of a Bag he had brought out with him, and by the Means of a wooden Inſtrument made for that Purpoſe, thruſt him in to the very End, and drew him out dead to all Appearance. When he had remain'd ſome Time for us to view him, he took him up by the fore Legs, and threw him into the Lake *Agnano*, where he recover'd immediately, ſwam out, and ran away from us. *Don Antonio* told me, it was a hard matter to get a Dog there; for as ſoon as ever they ſaw a Stranger, they would run away into the Woods, and ſneak home again when they were gone; which was the Reaſon the Perſon that went in, always ſecures one for the Occaſion.

A Mile farther we went to the Court of *Vulcan*; a Place unpleaſant enough, continually ſmoking, and ſuch hot Vapours ariſe from the Pores of the Earth that it almoſt overcame me. In ſome Places Water bubbles out of the Cavities; and if we threw a Stone into it, it rebounded back as if you had ſtruck it againſt a Pavement. But the Place is reckon'd to cure a great many Diſtempers; eſpecially to make Women pregnant,

rant, and to cure Diſeaſes of the Head and Eyes. *Donna Iſabella* was carry'd over it in a Sedan; but I believe ſhe did not want it upon the ſcore of Barrenneſs, as you may underſtand in her Story.

We ſpent ſix Weeks in this not unpleaſing Entertainment, and *Don Antonio* being pretty well ſatiated as well as my ſelf, we went back again to *Rome*.

And now my Melancholy gain'd ſuch Ground upon me, that it was not in the Power of Diſſimulation to hide it. *Don Antonio* and all the Family expreſs'd a great deal of Trouble for my Sorrow; and I am well aſſur'd there was not any thing in their Power they would have refus'd, to have given me Quiet: but the Mind's Diſeaſe baffles the Phyſician's Art. At laſt a Letter arriv'd from the Friar, which gave us no other Account, but that he was ſafe return'd to *Genoa*, and intended to embark for *Rome* in a few Days. This lame Account quite diſhearten'd me, for now we had not the leaſt Hope, being we all agreed if he had ſucceeded he would have been forward enough to have acquainted us with it. The Knowledge of this caſt me quite down, and my Body was forc'd to ſubmit to the Troubles of my Mind. A ſtrong Fever ſeiz'd me, and brought me to the Brink of the Grave: And tho' I wiſh'd for Death, yet, like common Friends, he fled from me in my Neceſſity.

Don Antonio and his Lady ſeldom went from my Bedſide, and had I been a Brother to 'em they could not have regarded me more. But Nature, in ſpite of my Misfortunes, prevail'd, and I gather'd Strength even againſt my Will. They had inform'd me in my Illneſs (by my Importunity) of the Friar's Arrival, and that he had not ſucceeded in his Negotiation: But yet they had not told me all the Particulars. I deſir'd the Friar might be ſent for, and conceal nothing from me of what had paſs'd. Accordingly he came, and gave me

the

the following Relation. Sir, ſaid he in *French*, as ſoon as I arriv'd at *Sallee*, I met with *Hamet* the *Iriſh* Renegado. He receiv'd me at firſt after a brutiſh manner, but when I declar'd I came to pay him his Demand for one of his Slaves who made his Eſcape, he began to be luſh four in his Treatment. He ſaid a great many handſom things concerning *Don Antonio*; but when I began to mention you, he fell into a violent Rage, and vented bitter Reproaches againſt you; ſaying you were a vile Impoſtor, had baſely deceiv'd and robb'd him doubly, of his Miſtreſs and his Money. I told him, I came to ranſom the Lady, and pay for whatever Damages you had done. As for the Lady, ſaid he, ſhe's Food for Fiſhes long ago; for rather than ſhe would ſubmit to me, ſhe threw her ſelf overboard, (before we had gain'd the Port, when I had taken her out of a *Saick* one of my Slaves had brought her in from *Mammora*) and, in ſpite of our Endeavours to the contrary, ſunk for ever to the Bottom. And is ſhe gone! ſaid I: O Proof of virtuous Love! Happy had I been to have embraced the ſame Fate!

The Relation of this killing Diſaſter took away my Senſes for ſome time; but when I had recover'd, he went on. I had ſome Hope at firſt that this was only a Fiction of his own; but I found in the Town that it was no Secret, and every body declar'd that it was Truth. A *Jew* confirm'd me in't, whom you had bought ſeveral Things of for your Voyage. He told me, that *Hamet* arriv'd without any Woman with him, for he ſaw him land in a very ill Humour, and had complain'd of him for afflicting you, to his Superior at *Mequinez*, and he receiv'd a ſufficient Check from him. I was too well convinc'd of the Truth, and therefore haſten'd my Departure, and am very ſorry I could not ſucceed: but it was not in Fate, and I hope you will calmly ſubmit to the Will of Heaven, who ſends theſe Afflictions for Trials.

The

The good Friar gave me a great many wholſome Admonitions: But I was not in a State much to obſerve 'em. I now began to be careleſs of the World, becauſe there was nothing in't (ſince the Death of my dear Wife) worth my Notice. I had no Thoughts of returning to *England*, though I had Opportunities enough; but took a Reſolution of going to ſome remote Part of the World; imagining, the farther I was from my native Country, I ſhould be the further remov'd from my Anxiety. But alas! Sorrow is too conſtant a Companion, and there's no parting with it, but by Death.

I begg'd Don *Antonio*, if he heard of any Ship bound for a long Voyage, he would acquaint me with it, which he promis'd me to do. (after finding Perſuaſion had no Effect on me.) Two Months paſs'd away, and no News of a Ship; when I began to be very uneaſy, and told *Antonio*, I would e'en make a Voyage to *Genoa*, where I could not well fail of a Veſſel. When he found nothing could ſtay me, he ask'd me to what Part of the World I would chuſe to go? I told him I did not much care where. Why then, ſaid he, if you pleaſe, my Father and I will fit you out a Ship of what Burden you think fit, either for War or Traffick. I thank'd him, and told him, I would have it for both, if he pleas'd, and I would be their *Supra Cargo*, if they thought fit to give me ſo great a Truſt. In ſhort, a Ship of two hundred and fifty Ton was bought of an *Engliſh* Merchant at *Naples*; a ſtout new Veſſel, that mounted ſix and twenty Braſs Guns, and we mann'd her with a hundred Hands, moſt *Engliſh*; who underſtanding I intended for the *South-Sea*, were glad of the Opportunity. *Don Antonio* took care to provide every thing neceſſary for Traffick; and I was made Captain, and *Supra Cargo*. I told him, I hoped I ſhould in a few Years bring him a good Account of his Lading. He obligingly

obligingly anſwer'd me, that he hop'd I would come Home reconcil'd to my ſelf, and he ſhould think himſelf very happy. The worſt of it was, we had no Commiſſion, neither would I ſuffer *Antonio* to procure me one: For we reſolv'd, like *Engliſhmen*, to fight only with the Enemies of our Country.

I chriſten'd my Ship the *Iſabella*, out of Reſpect to *Antonio*'s Lady, and hoiſted *Engliſh* Colours on Board. When the Day came I was to go on Board, there were Tears ſhed on both Sides. I could not, without ſome Regret, part with ſo good a Friend as *Antonio* had prov'd to me; and I am very well convinc'd that they were as ſincere in their Sorrow.

We ſet Sail from *Oſtia*, (where our Ship lay ever ſince ſhe came from *Naples*) the ſecond of *March* 1693, with Intention to ſteer our neareſt Courſe for *America*. Our Ship prov'd an excellent Sailor; and we made the *Streights* Mouth in twelve Days from our firſt Departure. When I beheld the Coaſt of *Africa*, it brought freſh to my Memory paſt Tranſactions; and I long'd for an Opportunity to be reveng'd on the *Moors*. The next Day our Men diſcover'd two Sail bearing down the Wind upon us. We thought our ſelves too well provided to run away; tho' we kept on our Courſe; and perceiving but one of 'em that follow'd us, I ask'd my Men if they were willing to ſpeak with that Veſſel, and they cry'd one and all, they would with all their Hearts. We prepar'd for an Engagement with all the Expedition imaginable, for fear ſhe might prove of *Barbary*. We hoiſted our *Engliſh* Colours, and they did the ſame. When we found that, we lay by, that we might be inform'd of the News in *England*. But aſſoon as ever they came a long Side of us, they pluck'd down their *Engliſh* Colours, and hoiſted thoſe of *Morocco* in their Room; calling to us to ſurrender that Inſtant, or it ſhould be worſe for us. We were a little ſurpriz'd at firſt in being

diſappointed;

disappointed; but notwithstanding this, my Men desir'd I would begin the Fight. We had not open'd our Ports yet, and I order'd my Men not to do it till I gave 'em the Word. I sent a Man to busy himself about the Halliards of our Ancient, that the *Rover* might imagine we were going to strike. We were well provided with small Arms, and all manner of warlike Stores. I order'd every Man to their Posts, but not to appear till they heard a Whistle; upon which they should open their Ports, and fire both great Guns and small Arms. The *Rover* thought us long in striking our Colours; he therefore call'd out to us again, and told us if we did not strike that Instant, they would pour a Broad-side into us. Just upon that, I blew my Whistle; my Men obey'd my Orders punctually, they burst open our Ports, thrust out their Guns, and gave 'em a Broad-side, with a discharge of their small Arms. This put 'em in much Confusion, as not expecting any Opposition, and I am certain we kill'd a great many of their Men; for imagining we should be their Prize without fighting, they had crouded upon Deck all their Hands.

I had tack'd about, and given her another Salute, before they return'd us the Favour. But they were not long backward, but pour'd in upon us very fast. My Men did their Business very well, and the Fight continu'd half an Hour with the utmost Fury. I began to fancy we should have but dry Meat (as the Sailors say) and looking upon their Quarter-Deck, I soon spy'd the Renegado *Hamet* giving Directions. At the Sight of him I was both surpriz'd, and pleas'd; but my Soul was fill'd with an unusual Fury. We were so near, that I could hear every Word he said, tho' I could not understand him, because he spoke in the *Moorish* Tongue. As we were tacking about, and charging again, I shew'd my self to him: I told him he was the only Man in the World that I hated; and that very Day he

he ſhould be in my Power, or I in his, or Death ſhould put an End to both our Lives. He ſeem'd ſurpriz'd, but gave me a great deal of abuſive Language. I encourag'd my Men, and deſir'd 'em to fight bravely; for if we fell into their Hands, we ſhould have no Mercy. I had fir'd my Piece at Random before, that is, at the firſt Perſon I ſaw; but now I level'd all at *Hamet*, and he the ſame at me. At laſt I had the good Fortune to fetch him down. At this Sight I could not forbear giving a Shout of Joy, which ſo affected thoſe that were near me, and underſtood the Buſineſs, that they fought like ſo many Furies; and after an obſtinate Fight of two Hours, they ſtruck to us. We gave God Thanks for our Victory; and I immediately went on Board 'em, where we had made a terrible Slaughter, they having loſt by their own Account ninety ſeven Men.

I ask'd ſome of the Men, what Ship that was which ſtood aloof from the Engagement; and they inform'd me it was a Prize they had taken a few Days before, laden with Wine and other Commodities. I then thought of a Stratagem to get her into my Power. I order'd our Ship to ſtrike her Colours, and then we hoiſted thoſe of the *Moors*, and took our Ship in Tow. When the Prize ſaw us in that Poſture, ſhe imagin'd the *Moor* had conquer'd, and made all the Sail ſhe could to come up with us; ſo that we ſoon came near enough to ſend our Long-Boat arm'd on Board her.

There were but twelve *Moors* on Board, beſides Priſoners that were put under Hatches. When our Men had taken care of 'em, I went to 'em, and order'd the Priſoners to be releas'd, deſiring the Perſon that was the Maſter to come upon Deck. The *Moors* had not taken any of the Lading out of her. She was a Ship of ninety Tons bound for *Leverpool*, laden, as I ſaid before, with Port-Wines, and ſeveral Jars of Oyl. I told the

Maſter, he was at Liberty to purſue his Voyage when he thought fit. The poor Man was ſome time before he could believe what I ſaid to be real: But when he was convinc'd, he return'd me the Thanks ſuitable to the Preſent I had made him. Yet he would make me a Preſent of a couple of Hogſheads of Wine, two Jars of Oyl, and two of Raiſins; beſides ſix of each to the Ship's Crew. I had loſt ſeventeen of my Men in the Engagement, and eleven wounded; which I ſupply'd, by taking as many of the Slaves they had on board of *Hamet*'s Ship, all by their own Choice; and the reſt that did not care for ſo long a Voyage, I recommended to the Maſter of the Prize, who promis'd me to land 'em all in *England*.

We pillag'd the *Corſair*, and found very good Booty. We had out of her to the Value of two thouſand Pounds in Goods, which I enter'd in the Ship's Books for the Uſe of the Company. We did not know well how to diſpoſe of her Crew; and tho' they deſerv'd Death, yet in cool Blood I thought it was inhumane; and I conſider'd they never had injur'd me. So I releas'd 'em by the Conſent of the whole Company, with this Agreement; that they ſhould make a Preſent from me to *Mirza* the Eunuch, of fifty Pound in their *Moriſh* Money, which he that had Command over the reſt ſwore by *Mahomet* to perform. When we had taken every thing that was needful for our Voyage out of her, we let her go, and purſu'd our Courſe.

We touch'd at the *Canaries* (or Fortunate Iſlands) to take in Freſh Water, and turn'd the Lading we had taken out of the *Corſair* into Money: And I ſhar'd it among the Sailors, reſerving a fourth Part for my ſelf and Owners, as I call'd 'em. I gave the Men by Lots leave to go a-ſhore, where they ſoon diſpos'd of their Money for things they wanted; but the chief of their Commerce was for Wine and Brandy, knowing we had a long Voyage to make.

We

We were obliged to leave the Place ſooner than we deſign'd, by reaſon our Pilot had unfortunately kill'd a *Portugueze*, and the Governor threaten'd to have our Ship ſtopp'd if we did not ſurrender him up. I underſtood that the Deceas'd had been in the Wrong, and therefore rather than run the hazard of loſing him, we ſet Sail from thence the tenth of *April*. The Caſtle fir'd ſeveral Guns with Shot to ſtay us, but we did not regard it, but kept on our Voyage.

We met with nothing worth Notice till we made the Iſland of St. *Vincent*, one of the *Cape Verde*, and came to an Anchor in ten Fathom Water, in a fine gravelly Bottom.

Theſe Iſlands are the *Heſperides* of the Ancients. The Natives are Blacks, a poor miſerable People. They brought us a few Tortoiſe, which we exchang'd any Traſh for, and they were contented. The Rivulet of freſh Water would hardly ſupply us, it being almoſt dry'd up. But we had Wood enough. The whole Iſland is not above two Leagues and a half in Length, and half a one in Breadth; very barren of Fruit, Graſs, or Roots, and even Animals. I ſaw only a few wild Aſſes, and ſome Goats, which were too nimble for us, or ſo far off that they were not worth our waſting Powder and Shot.

The Iſland of St. *Anthony*, about two Leagues to the North, is a well-inhabited Iſland, belonging to the Crown of *Portugal*. We reſolv'd to go and Anchor there; but the Wind proving fair, we purſu'd our Voyage, paſs'd by the Iſland *del Fogo* in the Night, and we could perceive the *Volcano* burning like the Flame of a Glaſs-houſe. Twenty Days afterwards we paſs'd the Æquinoctial Line, with the uſual Ceremony of ducking all thoſe Perſons that had never been there before. But I bought off the beſt Part of the Delinquents for an Anchor of Brandy.

The next Day we bury'd two of our Men, who dy'd of the Wounds they had receiv'd in the Fight; but all the reſt happily recover'd. We gave 'em three Guns, and committed 'em to the Waves.

In the Latitude of twenty two, we ſaw a great Number of Fowls, and therefore judg'd we could not be many Leagues from Land, which we diſcover'd ſoon after to be *The Iſland of Aſcenſion*, about two Leagues to the North; but we paſs'd by it, and in two Days more anchor'd in ſix Fathom Water at the Iſland of St. *Catharines*, about half a Mile from the main Land of *Braſil*.

This Iſland lies in twenty ſeven Degrees thirty Minutes of South Latitude. It is almoſt a continu'd Grove of Trees, and but thinly inhabited by *Portugueze*, and a few Blacks. They are in want almoſt of all the Neceſſaries of Life, beſides Proviſion, which is plentiful enough, ſuch as it is. The Inhabitants are courteous enough, and would not take Money for any thing we had of 'em, but Linen and Woollen. And after I had got every thing that was neceſſary for the Ship, I ſold 'em Goods to the Value of four hundred Pounds, which I receiv'd in pure Gold. They never have Peace with the *Indians* of the Continent; and being ſo very near, they have often formerly made Inroads, and carry'd off the Inhabitants. But they have prevented ſuch Attempts for the future, by building ſeveral Redoubts, where they keep conſtant Guard.

They pay no other Taxes but the Church-Tythes, (which they'll be ſure not to loſe;) and for Religion, they had but one Friar when I was there; and all his Buſineſs was, as I was inform'd, only to receive his Tenths.

A *Frenchman* told me a pleaſant Story of one of the Inhabitants, an induſtrious Fellow that had ten Children; but, notwithſtanding his Induſtry, found it a hard Matter

Matter to bring both Ends together at the Year's End: Tho' the worſt of his Grievances was the Prieſt's Tythes, and his Money. He often endeavour'd to perſuade the Father to forget him a Year or two, but all to no Purpoſe. One Day the Father paid him a Viſit, in order to receive his Dues. The poor Man told him ingenuouſly he had it not in his Power to give it him. But he ſtill inſiſted. At laſt he told him he had but one Way to procure it, and that he fear'd the Church would not allow of. The Friar told him he was the beſt Judge of that, if he would tell him what it was. Why, ſaid the Man, a Perſon that lives on the Continent has ſeveral fat Pigs, of a very fine Breed. Now, ſaid he, I could bring one over with me unperceiv'd of any one, as I come from my daily Labour; and ſuch a one (naming a Neighbour) will give me a good Price for it. The Friar paus'd ſome time, but at laſt gave him this Anſwer. It is certainly a Sin to ſteal, but yet it is a greater Sin to rob the Church of its Due, and therefore I will abſolve you. But bring the Pig to me, for if it's worth ſo much to your Neighbour, it is worth as much to me. The Man told him he would be ſure to bring it him that Night, and the Friar ſaid if he was not at Home, he would leave Word with his Servant to take Care of it. Now the Friar had no conſtant Dwelling here; for they are ſent from *Lagos*, a Town upon the Continent, about ten Leagues to S. S. W. and their Tythes were uſually ſent there in a ſmall Bark kept for that Purpoſe. The Prieſt took care to be out of the way (that he might ſwear he knew nothing of the Matter, if it was found out) at the Time when the Man was to come with his Pig; but gave his Servant a ſtrict Order, whatever was brought ſhould be immediately carry'd on Board, and taken a great deal of Care of.

When the Time came, the Man was as good as his Word, and brought to the Prieſt's Houſe his Promiſe in a Hand-basket. The Servant obey'd his Maſter's Orders, and went to carry it on Board; but before he could get to the Harbour, what he had in his Basket began to cry out. The poor Fellow was very much frighted to find he had got a Child in the Basket; but fearing, by the Charge his Maſter gave of it, he was deeply concern'd in the Affair, made all the haſte he could on Board: And the Veſſel ſetting Sail that Night, he went with his Charge to *Lagoa*, where he very ſecretly delivered it to the Brotherhood.

The Prieſt at St. *Catharines* thought his Man had robb'd him, and made his Eſcape, being he was miſſing ſo long; for he had carry'd a great many other things on Board before the Child. The Imagination of this made the Father very uneaſy; and the Wind continuing fair, he imbark'd on board a Veſſel, and arriv'd at *Lagoa* the Day after his Man. But what was his Surprize, when he found he had got a ſucking Child, inſtead of a ſucking Pig! He told the reſt of his Brethren the Affront that had been put upon him; and they reſolv'd to ſend the Bantling back again: but either for want of due Care, or through the Fatigue of the Sea, the Child dy'd. When the Friar came back to St. *Catharines*, he ran open-mouth'd to the poor Man, and ſwore he ſhould be excommunicated for playing Tricks with the Church. The Man told him, he was forward enough to have his Tythes; ſo having ten Children, and finding nine too many to keep, he was reſolv'd he ſhould have his Due, and have the Tenth. And farther added, if he offer'd to make any more Stir about it, he would acquaint every Body with his encouraging him to ſteal from his Neighbours.

The Father finding the Man had too much Underſtanding to be Prieſt-ridden, thought it his beſt way to hold

hold his Tongue. But the Secret was diſclos'd, and the poor Prieſt led a ſad ſort of Life: For whenever he came for his Tythes, many would merrily ask him if he would have his Tythe Pig. In ſhort, the Friar was ſham'd out of the Iſland, and the Fraternity were obliged to ſend another Man in his Room, who very often hears the Story of the Child, tho' much againſt his Will.

We anchor'd at firſt within a Bow-ſhot of the *Iſland of Parrots*, in ſeven Fathom Water: But we were inform'd the beſt Place to water our Ship, was two Leagues beyond the Iſland of St. *Catharine*. We had our preſent Wants ſupply'd from the Continent, tho' not enough to water the Ship; ſo we reſolv'd to ſteer for the watering Place, in the Bay of *Arazatiba*.

We ſteer'd between the Iſland and the Continent, and all the way on each ſide we diſcover'd a beautiful Proſpect of Houſes, inviron'd with natural Woods and Groves, which gave the Eye a vaſt Delight. When we approach'd the Bay of *Arazatiba*, we perceiv'd a Ship, with *Engliſh* Colours, with her Anchor a-peak, in order to diſcover who we were. I immediately hoiſted *Engliſh* Colours, but prepar'd for an Engagement, as imagining her to be *French*, (or ſome *Engliſh* Pirate;) for there was War between the two Nations: But I found it was a Privateer, commanded by Captain *Dampier*, who made me a Viſit, after having hail'd us. When he was on Board, he us'd many Perſuaſions to engage me to conſort with him, and follow the Buſineſs of Privateering; but I told him, I had other Affairs to manage. After I had treated him handſomely with what the Ship afforded, he took his Leave, and invited me to dine on board his Veſſel the next Day. I gave him my Promiſe to wait on him, and I accordingly went, where I was very handſomely treated; and there we agreed two Days after to make an Entertainment jointly

for the Officers of both Ships on Shore; and the Day after that, for the reſt of the Crew.

In order to this I commanded a large Tent to be pitch'd, capable of holding fifty Perſons; and we ſtrove who ſhould ſend the moſt Materials on ſhore for our Feaſt. We had the Muſick of both Veſſels; but mine proving to be the beſt, as being *Italians*, gave the moſt Delight: not but they join'd in Conſort, and agreed very well.

After Dinner, Captain *Dampier* told me, tho' he could not oblige me with *Italian* Muſick, yet he had an *Engliſh* Eunuch that ſang admirably; he added, he could not anſwer for his Judgment, but he was very well convinc'd he never heard a finer Voice in his Life. The Perſon was brought in; but my Readers may gueſs at my Surprize, when, in the Perſon of the Singer, I diſcover'd my Miſtreſs's Lawyer, whom my Maſter and his Friend had equipt for a fine Singer. I knew him aſſoon as ever I ſaw him, but I perceiv'd by his Behaviour he had no Knowledge of me; neither was it very poſſible he could have known me, becauſe he had never ſeen me but once, and then he had too much Concern to make any Obſervations: But the Occaſion had imprinted in my Mind a lively Idea of him.

He ſung admirably well, and with good Judgment. I ask'd the Captain how he came to be an Eunuch; he told me he could not inform me, neither could he ever prevail upon him to let him know it. We were very merry for ſeveral Hours; and I may ſafely declare that during that Time I had bury'd my inward Malady.

I told the Singer, I believ'd I could let Captain *Dampier* into the Secret of his Caſtration, if he would not be offended at it. He ſeem'd very much concern'd, and bluſh'd; but imagining I knew nothing of the Matter, he gave me his Conſent to ſay what I thought fit; yet with the utmoſt Chagrin in his Face, as believing

ing he was only going to be the Jeſt of the Company.

But when I began to name my Maſter, and enter'd into ſome Part of the Story, I found him in the utmoſt Confuſion, inſomuch that I pity'd him, and told him I would not proceed any farther without his Conſent. He told me in bad *French*, (for he had obſerv'd that the Captain and I ſometimes talk'd to one another in that Language) that I was very welcome to tell his unfortunate Story, but not to ſo many Auditors; for, added he, I perceive you know it very well. I gave him my Word only to tell the Captain, for which he thank'd me; but I told him, in return, that he muſt let me into the reſt of his Story; which he promis'd to do. The Captain and I, with my quondam Lawyer, took an Opportunity of leaving the Company, and walking a little way up the River Side, where I inform'd him that I came to the Knowledge of his Story, by the Porter that dogg'd him, (for I did not think it convenient to let him know that I was a Perſon concern'd) and that ſeeing him go into the Coach in *Lombard-ſtreet*, I remember'd his Face again. He gave us his Story in the following manner.

I was bred up to the Law by my Father, an Attorney of *Lincolns-Inn*; who dying, left me a ſmall Eſtate, which I ſoon ſpent in none of the beſt Company. I had no Thoughts of Buſineſs, 'till drove to it through the utmoſt Neceſſity. But finding Want approaching began to open my Eyes, I took Chambers in *Cliffords-Inn*, and reſolv'd to ſtick to Buſineſs. I ſoon found Clients enow through the Credit of my Father; and underſtanding the rough as well as the ſmooth Part of the Law, I got Money enough to ſupply even my Extravagance. I had ever been a very great Admirer of the Female Sex, and had the good Fortune, or rather the Ill, to ſucceed in moſt of my Amours.

The firſt time I ever ſaw the fatal Cauſe of my Misfortune, was at St. *Dunſtan*'s Church; (which, to my Shame I muſt own, I too often frequented without Devotion) Our Eyes often told us the Language of the Heart. I got the Opportunity of ſitting in the next Pew to her, but had never once diſclos'd my Paſſion.

One *Sunday*, as the Clerk had ſet the Pſalm, ſhe begg'd I would lend her my Book; ſaying ſhe had left hers at Home. When ſhe had done, ſhe return'd it me, and thank'd me. I had reſolv'd with my ſelf to have waited on her out of the Church, but was prevented by the Perſon that was afterwards her Huſband. When I came home, I pull'd my Prayer-Book out of my Pocket, but perceiv'd it would not ſhut as uſual, which put me on examining it. I found a Note pinn'd to the laſt Leaf, which I had not obſerv'd before: The Contents were to invite me to an Aſſignation that Evening at Six.

I was very punctual, and found her there before me. I begg'd her Pardon for making her wait, which ſhe eaſily granted with a gentle Reproach; and we ſoon came to a right Underſtanding: for that very Night, before we parted, I had what I wiſh'd; the Sweet which was follow'd by the worſt of Bitters.

She told me ſhe had long had a Paſſion for me; which, tho' ſhe reſiſted all ſhe could, got the better of her Modeſty, and forc'd her to declare it. She inform'd me too, that ſhe was ſpeedily to be married to the Man that led her out of Church, tho' it was much againſt her Inclination; but ſhe was oblig'd to comply with her Mother's Commands.

We had many Meetings: ſometimes at my Chambers, till I was taken too much Notice of by ſome of my Neighbours: And when ſhe was married we often met at different Places, and ſhe as often made me handſome Preſents. He then related how he was diſcover'd

at

at my Maſter's Houſe by one of the Prentices, (meaning me; but as he conceal'd his Face by turning it to the Window, he could not remember him.) He alſo related all that I have declar'd in the former Sheets; and added, that when the Operation was over, his Miſtreſs, as knowing him of no farther Uſe to her, left him without ſpeaking a Word. When I had recover'd Strength, ſaid he, to write, I ſent for ſome of my intimate Friends, and among the reſt a Surgeon. I told him my Misfortune, and was examin'd by him; but I was obliged to ſtay at the Inn ſeveral Days. At laſt (tho' almoſt a Miracle) I was perfectly cur'd, and return'd to my Buſineſs; but my Story getting Air, I was made the Scoff of every Body that ſaw me; till in ſhort my Life became a Burthen to me, and I took a Reſolution to go to ſome Part of the World where no one ſhould know me; and getting acquainted with Captain *Dampier*, he favour'd me ſo far as to enter me Steward. I had learnt to ſing when I was young; and my Voice, growing clear by my Loſs, is much improv'd. I had kept my Misfortune a Secret to all the Crew, if I had not receiv'd a Wound in my Thigh by an *Indian* Arrow on the Coaſt of *Florida*, a Year ago; for the Surgeon coming to dreſs me, when the extream Anguiſh had taken away my Senſes, perceiv'd my Condition, and diſclos'd it to the Company: But I have the good Fortune not to be flouted at.

When the Story was finiſh'd, we join'd our Company again, and ended the Day in Mirth and Jollity. The next Day my Crew went on Shore to regale themſelves; for Captain *Dampier* and I had alter'd our Reſolution of ſending both Companies together, for fear of Quarrels and Diſorder. And his Crew went on Shore the following Day.

About

About Noon, as I was reading in my Cabin, I heard the Report of several Pieces; upon which I ran out, and went my self to the Top-mast Head, where I perceiv'd my Men, who were filling our Casks at the River of *Parrots*, surrounded by a multitude of *Indians*. I upon the Instant let slip our Cables, and having a strong Sea Breeze, steer'd full into the River's Mouth at all hazards, ordering every Man to his Arms, and to load all our great Guns with Musket Ball. By good Fortune the Tide was almost at the highest, so that we came on broad-side the Rivulet where our Men were defending themselves. They had made a Rampart with the empty Casks, and had kept off the *Indians* with their Pieces; but just as we came, they had spent all their Ammunition, and had resolv'd to submit to the *Indians*. But assoon as they perceiv'd us, they took to their Heels, and ran towards our Ship, and the *Indians* after them; but we soon stopp'd their Career, by firing our double and round, which kill'd 'em above fifty Men, and put the rest to Flight. We took our Men on Board, and intended to fall out of the River, but found the Tide turn'd; and before we could get out, our Ship ran a-ground, so that we were oblig'd to wait till the next Tide. I was very uneasy at this Accident, and order'd my Lieutenant to take the Boat, and acquaint Captain *Dampier* with it.

In the mean time, not to be idle, I arm'd twenty Men, and order'd them to guard the rest while they fill'd our Casks; which was accordingly done, and with the Long-Boat brought on Board. I would not let them be hoisted into the Ship, for fear of hurting her now she lay aground; tho' it prov'd to be a clayie Bottom.

An Hour before Night we perceived an *Indian* running very swiftly to us, who call'd to us in *Portugeze* to fetch him aboard. Assoon as he was in the Ship, he told a Man that understood *Portugeze*, that the *Indians*,

to

to the Number of a Thouſand, deſign'd in the middle of the Night to attack our Ship, and that they would come down in Canoes; for they very well knew we could not get out till Tide of Flood.

This Man, whom we took for an *Indian*, was a *Portugueze* the *Indians* had taken Priſoner a Year before, and underſtanding their Language learnt their Reſolution; and while they were calling their Number together, he took his Opportunity to make his Eſcape. I order'd him to be told he ſhould be rewarded for his Intelligence. I immediately call'd all the Officers together to conſult about the Danger, and we agreed to ſend to Captain *Dampier* for Help, who came with fifty Men well arm'd: And by his Advice, aſſoon as it was dark, we landed ſix of our Cannon, and rais'd a ſmall Battery without any Noiſe or Buſtle; theſe were pointed up the River ſlaunting. Two of our Guns were loaded with double and round, in the Stern of our Ship. The reſt of our Men were order'd in cloſe Coverts on each Side the River, with Directions to let the *Indian* Canoes paſs 'em, and not to fire till they were all gone by.

Every thing was concerted and ſettled, and every man order'd to his Poſt, to expect the Charge; and we had contriv'd it ſo well, that none of our Fires could hurt one another.

About one a-clock in the Morning we could hear their Paddles in the Water, and ſoon after perceive 'em ſilently falling down the River, to the Number of two hundred Canoes. We let them come within fifty Yards of our Ship, before we fir'd; but when we began, we made ſuch a terrible Slaughter of 'em, that I pity'd 'em. We took one Canoe with twelve *Indians*, and their Chief among them. When the Morning dawn'd, we were amaz'd to ſee what Havock Death had made; the very Shores were ſtain'd with Blood, and we had not loſt

loſt one Man of either of our Crews. The *Portuguez*, who gave us Notice, I rewarded with a hundred Pound, and two new Suits of Cloaths, both Linnen and Woollen; and we made Uſe of him for our Interpreter. He told us we had one of their *Caciques* among the Priſoners, and a Man of great Power among the *Indians*. I order'd him to ask him the Reaſon of his Enmity to us, ſince we had never offended them. He told him that he took us for *Spaniards*, or *Portugueze*, Nations they hated from the barbarous Uſage they had met with from them: But he was ſorry he had moleſted us, being he was convinc'd we were *Engliſhmen*, and Enemies to the *Spaniards* as well as themſelves: But however, he would pay ſufficiently for his Ranſom, if we would ſpare his Life; and accordingly we agreed for a hundred Weight of Gold Duſt, and twenty in Ingots, and he order'd one of his Retinue to fetch it. In the mean time, we took the Advantage of the Tide, and fell down to our old Station.

The next Day at Noon two Canoes arriv'd, one with the Gold, and ſeveral Perſons of Quality that came to wait on their King; and the other laden with Fruits and Proviſions, which I had equally parted between both Ships Companies. I took the Ingots for my Sharers, and the Duſt was divided among us according to our Allowance. Captain *Dampier* and his Crew were mightily pleas'd with their Dividend, and once more preſs'd me to accompany them: but I gave 'em a flat Denial for the preſent, with this Hope, that when I had viſited ſeveral Places in the *South Sea*, I would return to St. *Salvador*, and wait two Months for them there.

We put the *Indians* on Shore, and the next Day weigh'd Anchor again, ſaluting Captain *Dampier* with eleven Guns, who return'd the like Number, and we ſteer'd our Courſe with a freſh Gale, for the Streights of

of *Magellan*, I intending to paſs thro' thoſe Streights into the *South-Sea*; for I was of Opinion it would ſhorten our Voyage; and then my Curioſity ſtrengthen'd that Opinion: But I was adviſ'd by my Lieutenant to venture up to *Buenos Ayres*, a Town belonging to the *Spaniards*, where he aſſur'd me we might drive a very good Trade underhand with the Merchants. I communicated the Matter to the whole Company, who unanimouſly agreed it was the beſt Courſe we could ſteer. So we kept in with the Shore, and ſteer'd for the *Rio de la Plata*, or the *River of Plate*, which we reach'd in twenty Days without any Accident. As we had War with *France* and *Spain*, I had hoiſted *French* Colours, that we might have the Liberty to Trade with more Safety.

Buenos Ayres is ſituated above fifty Leagues up the *River of Plate*, which above the Town receives the Name of *Paraguay*; and takes its Riſe many Leagues up the Country; which is poſſeſs'd by a numerous Nation of *Indians*, who ſometimes Trade with the *Spaniards*, but oftner murder 'em when they can meet 'em conveniently; for the Spirit of Revenge is ſuck'd in with their Milk, and handed down from Father to Son; ſo that they imagine it to be a very meritorious Deed to diſpatch one of them; and they are generally rewarded by their *Cacique* for it.

The Town of *Buenos Ayres* takes its Name from the excellent Temperature of the Climate, and its pleaſant Situation. They have Commerce with the Ships of *Europe* not above once a Year, which bring 'em the Neceſſaries they want, and in Return eaſe 'em of their Gold; that being a Metal leſs eſteem'd than Iron, which proves more uſeful to them. When we were within two Leagues of the Port, we came to an Anchor in a little Creek in eight Fathom Water, a ſandy Bottom. We did not care to go nearer the Town, for fear the Governor

Governour ſhould have taken it in his Head to have hinder'd our going out again.

Though we were not in Sight of it, yet we had Canoes on Board of us in an Hour after our anchoring, and ſome of Note came *incognito*, to be inform'd what we dealt in. One of them told me, he believ'd it would be no difficult thing to diſpoſe of my Cargo, if I thought fit to make the Governour a ſmall Preſent. Accordingly I took his Advice, and ſent my Steward in my Name, with a Piece of Holland, and half a dozen Pieces of *Italian* Silks; which he receiv'd as a very valuable Preſent, and ſent me Word he would not in the leaſt moleſt me, provided I did not deal too barefac'd. I underſtood him, and therefore was very cautious, ſelling but to one at a time, nor would I ſuffer another to enter my Ship, till the former was diſpatch'd.

In two Days I got rid of all the Cargo that I intended to part with, to a very great Advantage; and then I allow'd my Men Liberty to do what they thought fit with what they had, which gave them a general Satiſfaction. The next Day I invited the Governour on Board, with ſome of the principal Merchants, and entertain'd them in my Cabin; and in return, I was to dine on Shore at the Caſtle. But I left a ſtrict Order with my Lieutenant how to behave himſelf if I ſhould be ſtopp'd; for I knew the *Spaniards* to be unfaithful People.

When we landed, I obſerved the Town made but a mean Appearance, conſiſting only of two Streets built in the Form of a Croſs, and ſurrounded with a Mud Wall. The Caſtle it ſelf made but an indifferent Figure: but however I was very elegantly entertain'd. The Governour ſeem'd to have leſs of the Formality of the *Spaniard*, than ever I met with in any of them. When I took my Leave of him, he made me a Preſent of two *Indian* Slaves, and a Bar of Gold that weigh'd three Pound

Pound two Ounces. When I came on Board, I call'd a Council, to know what Courſe we ſhould ſteer next; for as to Traffick, I had no Pretence to go to the *South-Sea*, being all my Cargo was already diſpos'd of. We debated for ſome time, and at laſt we all agreed to go for the *South-Sea* upon the ſcore of Privateering. We communicated our Intentions to the Company, and they all ſeem'd very much rejoic'd at the Reſolution I had taken.

Now I began to repent I had not join'd with Captain *Dampier*; for I wanted Men for any notable Exploit, but I did not deſpair of meeting with him in the *South-Sea*. We weigh'd Anchor, and ſteer'd for the Streights of *Magellan* with a fair Wind. One Morning my Servant wak'd me, and told me that a Sail bore down upon us, and the Lieutenant deſir'd to know how to behave himſelf. I roſe upon the Inſtant and, by the help of my Perſpective, ſaw it was a Veſſel with *Engliſh* Colours; but I imagining they were put up only for a Shew, I caus'd *French* Colours to be hoiſted, which ſoon was anſwer'd by the ſame in the Ship that purſu'd us. I order'd every thing to be prepar'd for an Engagement without any Hurry, commanded my Men not to appear upon Deck, and kept on my Courſe with crouded Sail, that our Purſuers might imagine I was willing to get from them; yet I order'd it ſo by falſe Steering, that they gain'd upon us. About Three in the Afternoon they were within half a League of us, firing every Quarter of an Hour a Gun to Leeward, to let us know we were to take them for Friends.

I order'd our Men to tack about, hoiſt up *Engliſh* Colours, and bear upon them. We ſoon perceiv'd we had much ſurpriz'd them, but notwithſtanding they kept up their *French* Colours: and ſeem'd to prepare for the Engagement, tho' they were much inferior to us. When we came along Side I hail'd 'em, and (after owning

owning they were *French*) commanded them to ſurrender; but was anſwer'd with a Broadſide, which we return'd ſo faſt, that they ſoon ſtruck, and call'd for Quarter. I order'd the Captain to come on Board, who inform'd me that his Veſſel was call'd the *Felicity*, belonging to Monſieur *de Gennes*, and had been ſeparated from the Fleet three Days before. I us'd the Captain very handſomly, for the Sake of Monſieur St. *Olon* the *French* Ambaſſador. I gave him a Letter and a ſmall Preſent for that Gentleman, and diſmiſs'd him without taking any thing from them. I found this Action did not pleaſe ſome of my Men; and not caring to have them uneaſie, I ſummon'd them upon the Deck, and told 'em the Obligations I had to the *French* Ambaſſador; acquainting them, as this was a Ship of War, there was not much to be expected from 'em, therefore I told 'em I would ſhare five hundred Pound among 'em to make 'em Amends for their Diſappointment. But not one of them would accept a Penny; and in return I told them, I did not intend to make any more ſuch Compliments to the *French*, if ever they came into my Power again. They were very well pleas'd with my Declaration, and ſome of them prais'd my Generoſity; for tho' moſt Sailors are rough and blunt in Speech, yet they can in their way admire a generous Action as well as other Men.

Our Officers were under ſome Apprehenſions of meeting with the Squadron of Monſieur *de Gennes*, which being a Fleet of five Sail would certainly be too hard for us; and we were inform'd by the Captain of the *Felicity* that they were ſail'd for the Streights of *Magellan*. I found their Fears very reaſonable, and it would be a fool-hardy Action to encounter a Force ſo much ſuperior: For though Life was burthenſome enough to me, yet Humanity oblig'd me not to hazard the Lives of ſo many Men that were not out of Love

with

with this World. So I resolv'd to wave my Curiosity, and make for *Le Maire*'s Streights; which in five Days time we discover'd, known to Sailors by three Rocks, call'd the *Three Brothers* from their Likeness to one another.

We found a strong Current setting Northward, and an unusual Tossing of the Ship; but we got through the Streights in two Days with Safety, and made for the *South-Sea*.

The next Day we discover'd the *Magellan Clouds*, so well known to Sailors, which convinc'd us that we were over against those Streights that run into the *South-Sea*. These Clouds are always seen in the same Degree, and the same orbicular Form. We kept on our Course, not intending to come within Sight of the Continent for fear of a Discovery; and the Weather favour'd us, it continuing very hazy.

About an Hour within Night we heard the Sound of a Trumpet, which we conjectur'd must be on Board of some Vessel, because we were well assured we were not near enough the Land; upon which I immediately gave Orders to put out all our Lights, and steer our Course that way we heard the Sound; which Sounding often gave us true Notice of their Course; and in half an Hour, tho' pretty dark, we gain'd Sight of 'em: But their Mirth was soon chang'd when we got up with 'em, thrust out our Guns and hail'd 'em. We understood they were *Spanish*, and I order'd 'em to be told, if they did not upon the Instant lie by, and send their Commander on Board, I would immediately fire upon 'em. They very readily comply'd with my Orders, hoisted out their Boat, and the Captain came on Board me, whose Name was *Don Juan Villegro*, and his Ship the *Wild-fire*. He was employ'd by the Viceroy of *Peru*, to carry condemn'd Persons to *Baldivia*, which is the Residence of most of the Rogues of *America*. But we were

were also inform'd they had the *Real Situado* on Board, which is a Sum of Money so call'd, that is sent from the Viceroy of *Peru* to pay and clothe the Garrison, as well as to repair the Fortifications of *Baldivia*. This Sum usually amounted to four hundred thousand Crowns, but we could find no more than two hundred and fifty thousand; but then, to make Amends for the Deficiency, we met with a great many valuable *East-India* Goods, brought from thence by their *Manilla* Ships; for the Merchants always put their Supply for *Baldivia* in the Ship that carries the Money to pay the Garrison, that being the only Time to dispose of their Goods.

This Prize made my Men mad with Joy, and I fear'd it would make 'em think they should have enough, and consequently desire to return home. But I soon found it had the contrary Effect, and they all expected, from this Earnest of good Fortune, Richer enough in the Voyage we propos'd, to make 'em for ever.

I treated the Prisoners handsomly, which were forty-six, including fifteen Felons, who were well pleas'd to have chang'd their Masters; expecting better Usage from us than from the *Spaniards* of *Baldivia*, where they were design'd. There was one *Roberts*, an *Englishman*, among them, who, I have been inform'd, has been executed since for Piracy; him, two *Frenchmen*, four *Spaniards* and the Trumpeter, I enter'd in my Books to reinforce my Crew; understanding their Crime was only Suspicion of Piracy, therefore I was convinc'd they were good Sailors. But I did not know how to dispose of the Ship and the rest of the Crew. If I should give 'em their Liberty, they would of Course alarm the Country; and if I kept them with me, Provisions would fall short; for they were victualled but for a Month's Voyage.

The

The *Spaniſh* Captain being inform'd of my Fears, told me by an Interpreter, that he had receiv'd ſuch handſom Uſage from me, that he would upon his Honour ſteer to what Port I thought fit, and report, if I pleas'd, that I was ſail'd back again for the North Sea. I told him, though I could rely upon his Honour, he could not anſwer for all the reſt. At laſt I thought of a Stratagem to deceive the *Spaniſh* Captain as well as the other Priſoners, as follows. In the firſt Watch of the Night (the Priſoners being all under Hatches) I came to our Sailors upon Deck, and told 'em the ill Conſequence of keeping or letting go the Priſoners; and therefore concerted with 'em that they ſhould pretend a Mutiny the next Day, and all declare for going back through the Streights into the North Sea. When the firſt Watch was reliev'd, I acquainted the other Moiety of the Company, and then retir'd to Reſt. But my Slumbers were broken with Viſions of my dear Mrs. *Villars:* I dreamt I ſaw her in the Arms of the Renegado *Hamet*, ſtruggling and calling out on me for Help, and before I could come to her Aſſiſtance, Death had freed her from the barbarous Wretch. This Dream had brought to my Mind all my Afflictions, and I can't tell how long I ſhould have continu'd feeding upon my Sighs, if I had not been alarm'd with Shouts and Noiſes upon Deck. I ran out to ſee what was the Matter, and found my Men, as was deſign'd, in their feign'd Mutiny. I had forgot at firſt, and was much alarm'd; but recollecting, I carry'd on the Cheat. And Grief had ſo ſeated herſelf on my Countenance, with Thoughts of my Dream, that one of my Quarter-maſters told me afterwards, my Looks were enough to deceive all the World.

The *Spaniards* had leave to be upon Deck all the Day, and Care was taken to let them into the Secret. At Dinner I told the *Spaniſh* Captain (for he and the Mer-

Merchants always eat with me) that I thought his Speeches Yesterday were prophetic, for I was compell'd to comply with my obstinate Crew, and sail for the North Sea again. He reply'd, he wish'd me happy where-ever I went: And to carry on the Deceit, we steer'd our Course back again.

In the Afternoon *Roberts* came to me, and told me that one of the *Spaniards*, who was willing to stay with us, would undertake to bring me ten thousand Pieces of Eight in ten Days, if I would let him have the Prize. Upon what *Roberts* said, I sent for the Man, and had him examin'd by *Roberts*, who understood *Spanish* very well. The *Spaniard* told me, he would not have me inquire into the Matter till it was done; and for the better Security I might send who I thought fit with him, provided he had one of his Companions that was to help in the Design. Accordingly I order'd twenty Hands, and to obey the *Spaniard* in this Expedition as if he were their Captain.

We agreed to wait for them the limited Time, in the same Degree we parted from them. I inform'd the *Spanish* Captain, by an Interpreter, that his Countryman was gone upon some secret Expedition, and as soon as he return'd we would pursue our Course. He answer'd, whatever he had undertaken, he was of the Opinion he would succeed in it, for he had certainly as much Cunning as any Person in the World; he had been condemn'd to *Baldivia* once before, and made his Escape from thence; and he did not doubt but he would get from them again, if he had been carry'd there the second time; and farther gave me some Hints that he might deceive me in this Undertaking.

I began to be in some Fear of having a Knavish Trick play'd me, and would have recall'd the Vessel if it had not been too late; but hoping for the best, I resolv'd to cruise till the Time appointed was expir'd.

I

I had cloath'd my two *Indians*, that were preſented me by the Governor of *Buenos Ayres*, in *European* Habits very handſom; and inſtructed them in the *Engliſh* Tongue: They very readily learnt; and I gave them all the tender Uſage imaginable, which they were obligingly ſenſible of; and I believe they would have ſacrific'd their Lives to have ſerv'd me. I found them very handy, and docible, and very good-natur'd; which convinces me, if mild Methods were us'd with them, they might be very eaſily wrought to be Friends to the *Europeans*, eſpecially the *Engliſh*. And I think 'tis great Pity ſuch a vaſt Body of People ſhould be ignorant of the Divine Being that form'd the Univerſe. Though the *Spaniards* (it's true) ſend *Miſſionaries* among them to inculcate Chriſtianity, yet they generally neglect their holy Functions, and ſtrive all they can to enrich themſelves, by laying exorbitant Taxes upon the poor *Indians*: And I have been inform'd, that in ſome Parts of *America* all the Wealth they get is deliver'd to the *Miſſion*, referving to themſelves only what is needful, and that but from Day to Day. I had my two *Indians* made Chriſtians; one by the Name of *Robert*, and the other *Joſeph*; being mine and my Father's Names. And I hope, in the Sight of God, Lay-Baptiſm will ſuffice; eſpecially when we had not the Happineſs of the other Form. And it is not impoſſible, if they lead good Lives, they may find the Road to Heaven as well as if they had been chriſten'd in a Church, by an orthodox Clergyman.

Three Days before the Time I expected my *Spaniard* back, we diſcover'd two Sail making up to us, which made us prepare for an Engagement; but we ſoon perceiv'd it was our Prize, with another Veſſel. The *Spaniard* came on Board, and inform'd me that he had been ſomething better than his Word, for he believ'd that in Money and in Goods he had brought

to

to the Value of 80000 Dollars. He gave us the following Account, by *Roberts*. Laſt time I was Priſoner at *Baldivia*, I was compell'd to work for one *Don Sancho Ramirez*, a ſordid, covetous, jealous, malicious Wretch, one that us'd to deal in Merchandiſe. It was his uſual Method to wait at a Country Houſe near the Sea, for the Arrival of the *Real Situado* Ship, (which was the ſame I had taken) and then go privately on Board to deal with the Merchants. The Knowledge of this made me undertake this Expedition, as well to get Money, as to be reveng'd on the old Villain, for the Stripes he has often given me without any Provocation. When we arriv'd within half a League of the Place, we perceiv'd a Bark riding at Anchor. I began to demurr, as fearing we might be diſcover'd; but at laſt reſolv'd to proceed, let what would happen. The Bark weigh'd and made towards us, which occaſion'd another Surprize; but my Fears were ſoon over, when I perceiv'd *Don Sancho* upon Deck. He hail'd us, and deſir'd we would ſlacken Sail, that he might come on Board. Accordingly we ran into a ſmall Creek, and came to an Anchor. I did not appear at firſt, but let the other *Spaniard* that went with us perſonate the Captain, and inſtructed him accordingly. Aſſoon as he came on Board, he inquir'd for *Don Juan Villagra*, (for that Gentleman us'd to command the *Real Situado*) and was anſwer'd, that he was very ill, and could not ſail this Voyage. Then he inquir'd for the Merchants, telling him, that the Governor had diſcover'd his uſual Practice of Dealing firſt with them; therefore he had contriv'd to meet us in one of his own Veſſels, that was ready laden for *Buenos Ayres*, and only ſtaid for our Arrival to ſet ſail. I was glad to hear of that, becauſe I intended to make Prize of it. The *Spaniard* invited him into the Cabin, while I went on board his Bark with ten Men arm'd, and ſecured

cured it, there being but five Men and a Boy in it. The reſt of the Crew were on Shore.

I cut her Cable, and our own, and made out to Sea again. When we were under Sail, I came on Board, and ſhew'd my ſelf to the old *Don*, and in a few Words made him underſtand his Condition. I thought at firſt we ſhould have been oblig'd to have buried him, for he looked for a great while like one that was dead. But I recover'd him a little, by ſhewing him the Box that contain'd his Heart and Soul, (I mean his Money). He did his Endeavour to fly at me to be reveng'd on me, but he was held; but to give him a little more Comfort, I read over to him his Bill of Lading, and told him plainly, I would not deal with him, if his Goods did not anſwer his Bill. When he found he could do no good by Paſſion, he told me he would give me half his Money, if I would reſtore him his Ship and Cargo. I was very well as I was, I told him; and ſince I had got it all in my Poſſeſſion, I would have no more Dealings with him, only the odd ten thouſand Pieces of Eight more for his Ranſom. He was ſo thunder-ſtruck at this, that he did not ſo much as offer to open his Mouth to ſpeak; but kept ſo long ſilent, that I fancying he would never ſpeak again, took him upon Deck, that he might behold the lovely Proſpect of the Water; for by this time we were out of Sight of Land. His Heart then began to melt, and he fell down upon his Knees, and begg'd he might have his Liberty, notwithſtanding we had robb'd him. I was in a very great Paſſion, and order'd him to mollify the Word, and call it Over-reaching; which with much Chaſtiſement he did. But I told him, he was oblig'd to make your Honour one Viſit, and accordingly I have brought him to wait on you.

I muſt confeſs, I could not help admiring the *Spaniard*'s Ingenuity, and yet I did not greatly reliſh the

Action; for tho' it was lawful Prize to us, yet I thought it was downright Robbery in him. However, I gave him the Thanks our Intereſt requir'd; and further told him (by *Roberts* our Interpreter) that he ſhould be very well rewarded for his Undertaking.

The old *Spaniard* was brought on Board us, more dead than alive; and underſtanding we were *Engliſh*, he ſpoke to me in that Language, and begg'd he might be ſet at Liberty. I told him, he need not apprehend any thing, for he ſhould have his Liberty and civil Uſage. He thank'd me as well as his Grief would give him Leave, and I invited him to dine with me, which he did accordingly the ſame Day.

I order'd the Cargo out of the Bark, which was very conſiderable, and moſt of the Proviſion, becauſe I fear'd it would be what we ſhould want. The other Veſſel, as belonging to the King of *Spain*, and one who could pretty well bear that Loſs, I intended to keep for our ſelves. The Bark I reſtor'd to *Don Ramirez*, with ſeveral Bales of Goods that would prove of ſmall Uſe to us, tho' of Value to him; nay, I would very willingly have given him all his Goods and Money too, if it had not been for wronging my Crew; for, as I ſaid, I look'd upon it as gain'd by Fraud. However, I ventur'd to give him back twenty thouſand Ryals, which did not amount to mine and my Owner's Share. He return'd me his Acknowledgments, by giving me a very handſom Ring that they had not taken from him, and told me, he ever thought the *Engliſh* generous Enemies.

I caus'd all the Priſoners to be put on Board the Bark, and took my leave of them. They return'd me Abundance of Thanks for my kind Uſage; and vow'd, if ever Fortune ſhould ſend any of our Countrymen among 'em, they ſhould fare the better for my Sake. I muſt own, I was not diſpleas'd with their Acknowledgment.

ledgments. A Man feels a ſecret Pleaſure within himſelf, when he has done a humane Action; when on the contrary, if a Perſon has been guilty of Baſeneſs, Horror and Remorſe gnaw his Inwards.

The Day after I had parted with the Priſoners, I ſummon'd all my Men upon Deck, and told them what the *Spaniard* had done for 'em, and adviſ'd with 'em what Recompence I ſhould make him. We ſoon agreed he ſhould have five thouſand Pieces of Eight, his Companion five hundred, and the reſt of 'em enter'd to a Share of the Booty we had before taken. Accordingly I ſent for 'em, and told 'em what I intended. The *Spaniard* return'd me ſuitable Thanks in *French*, for he had been inform'd I underſtood that Language. I found in his Diſcourſe, a ready Turn of Wit and Humour, and of a Perſon that had read Mankind. He did not ſeem to be above thirty Years of Age, of a free and open Nature, having nothing of the ſtiff Formality of the *Spaniard*, tho' born at *Sevil* in *Old Spain*. I told him I expected a ſhort Account of his Life; he readily anſwer'd, he ſhould be proud to comply with my Deſires, but he begg'd I would defer it for ſome Time, till he might be a little more us'd to my Converſation; for, ſaid he ſmiling, mine has been a very merry and odd ſort of a Life, and therefore till I have more Freedom, I ſhall deſiſt, becauſe I ſhall loſe the Spirit in telling it.

We ſteer'd our Courſe towards *Panama*, depending that our Priſoners would ſpread the Report of our going back again for the North Sea. In thirty ſix Degrees, and forty five Minutes, we diſcover'd a Veſſel ſteering the ſame Courſe; I order'd the Prize to chaſe her, and before Night ſhe took her. It was a Bark laden with Tallow and Hides, bound for *La Conception*. I repented the taking of her, for we ſoon found ſhe was but a heavy Sailor, and therefore could not keep Com-

pany with us, and it was not proper for us to let 'em depart.

Don Pedro Aquilio, which was the Name of our Intelligent *Spaniard*, told me, he would undertake to diſpoſe of the Cargo and Bark to a good Advantage, if I could tell how to diſpoſe of the Men, which were but four, that is three *Indians* and a *Spaniard*. The *Indians* were very well pleas'd to be receiv'd as Servants on Board; yet we allow'd 'em a half Share in our future Purchaſes. The *Spaniard* we intended to detain on Board till we had made our cruiſing Voyage, and then releaſe him. So depending on *Don Pedro*'s Ingenuity, I let him go off with the Bark, with three *Spaniards* to aſſiſt him, having his Promiſe to return the next Day. We were then within five Leagues of *La Conception*, and therefore reſolv'd to remain in that Station till his Arrival, keeping *Mamelles de Biobio*, or the Dugs of *Biobio* (two Rocks ſo call'd) in View.

The next Day we perceiv'd him coming with a Pirogue, a ſmall *Spaniſh* Boat with one Sail. He brought me a handſome Preſent of Fruit, and enough beſides for the whole Crew. Well, ſaid he, I have made but an indifferent Bargain; I have brought you but twenty thouſand Pieces of Eight: The old Rogue of a Governor would not give any more. He told me that the Governor of *La Conception* ingroſſed all the Tallow and Hides, and forc'd the Retailers to give him his own Price; ſo he went boldly to him, and ſold him Bark and Cargo.

Don Pedro advis'd us to cruiſe for the *Manilla* Ship, which was daily expected. His Advice was approv'd on all Hands, therefore Orders were given to Wood and Water the Ships for the Voyage; and accordingly we made for *Juan Fernando*, and arriv'd there the fifth of *September* 1695. It being a remarkable Day with me, it lives in my Memory; for the loſs of my Journal by an

an odd Accident, hinders my keeping a regular Account. We ſpent but two Days in wooding and watering, and killing Goats, which are there in great Plenty.

There are three Iſlands that bear the Name of *Juan Fernando*, the firſt Diſcoverer, tho' there are no other Inhabitants on them than Goats. There's a noble Bay on the North Side of the Iſland, capable of containing five hundred Sail, where you anchor at ſixteen Fathom Water, a ſandy Bottom. We left it with a favourable Wind for our Deſign, and made farther up the Coaſt *January* the firſt; and it was fear'd we had miſs'd our Booty, for the *Manilla* Ship generally arrives at *Acapulco* about *Chriſtmas*; however we reſolv'd to coaſt about for twenty Days longer, and if we fail'd of her, to return into the North Sea, with a Deſign to cruize down the Coaſt.

We kept out of Sight of Land, for fear of being diſcover'd.

On the ſixth we perceiv'd two Sail, and accordingly gave 'em Chace. *Don Philip* aſſur'd me it was the *Manilla* Ship, and a Guard-Ship along with her. We call'd a Council immediately; where it was reſolv'd the Bark ſhould attack the *Manilla* Ship, while ours was to engage the Man of War: And this was the Reaſon *Don Pedro* gave for it; that the *Manilla* Ship was ſo very unwieldy, the Bark could play round her, and being ſo ſmall, ſhe was out of the reach of their Cannon, for they could make no Uſe but of thoſe upon their upper Deck. The Man of War ſeeing we gave 'em Chace, ſlacken'd her Sail to ſtay for us, imagining we ſhould both attack him, but he found himſelf miſtaken. Our *Pink* paſt him, without firing a Gun; but aſſoon as ever we came a-long Side, we gave him a Broad-ſide, with a loud Huzza. He ſoon return'd it, but we ply'd him ſo cloſe, that he began to make off; but we follow'd him cloſe at the Heels, and coming

under his Starboard Quarter, gave him another Broadside, which brought his Main-Maſt by the Board; upon which he immediately ſtruck.

The Sea being very ſmooth, tho' a handſome Breeze of Wind, we mann'd our Long-boat, and I went on Board with forty Hands, well arm'd. When I came upon Deck, I order'd the *Spaniards* to be taken on Board, and ſecur'd under Hatches; but I was much ſurpriz'd to find but ſixteen Men in the Ship, beſides eight that were kill'd, and not one that appear'd like an Officer among 'em. But we were ſoon inform'd, the Captain had order'd one hundred and fifty of his Men on Board the *Manilla* Ship, aſſoon as they had diſcover'd us in the Morning, becauſe her Crew were moſt of 'em ſickly.

We imagin'd our ſmall Veſſel muſt have warm Work on't, being not above thirty five Hands in all. So we reſolv'd immediately to cut off the Rudder of the Man of War, and leave her; for having loſt her Main-Maſt, ſhe could not follow us to do us any Damage; and ſix of her Men we took on Board us, who finding we were *Engliſh*, ſeem'd very willing to ſerve us; and I promis'd 'em their Share in the Booty, if we ſucceeded. Theſe ſix Men were old *Chriſtians*, as they call themſelves, and they value themſelves very much upon it, deſpiſing the *Creolians*. We made all the Sail we could after the *Manilla* Ship, and ſoon overtook her; for our ſmall Veſſel had kept her very well in Play, tho' ſhe had warm Work on't, and her Rigging was very much ſhatter'd, tho' they had not loſt a ſingle Man, but ſhe was obliged to fall a-ſtern to mend her Tackle. I order'd 'em to ſend me twenty Men on Board, which I was oblig'd to lie by for. I had brought all my Guns to bear on one Side, and did not fire one till I came under her Stern; and then I pour'd 'em into her, and tack'd about to charge again. I obſerv'd a Boat buſy about

about her Stern, but could not imagine what they were doing. However I reſolv'd they that were in it ſhould find a difficult Matter to get on Board again, But I was much ſurpriz'd to find it my own Boat with *Don Pedro* in it, who had taken the Occaſion in the Smoak of our firſt Broad ſide to nail up the Rudder, ſo that the Ship could not tack about. He made what haſte he could on Board the Bark, which had now mended all her Rigging, and got under her Stern; and as faſt as the *Manilla* Ship ſent Men to clear her Rudder, he prevented 'em with his Small-ſhot. In the mean time we ventur'd to come a-long Side of her, notwithſtanding her monſtrous Bulk, and gave her ſuch Entertainment, that they call'd out at laſt for Quarter, and ſtruck their Colours. I order'd all the Officers to come on Board, which they did. I receiv'd 'em all very civilly, and immediately after went on Board the Prize. I was amaz'd at her vaſt Bulk. She had ſeven Decks, and built ſo ſtrong, that not one of our Shot had gone through; yet they had above ſixty Men kill'd, through their Ports, and other Vacancies; and what was very ſurprizing, we had not one, and but two wounded.

They had above one hundred Men ſick on Board 'em, ſo that the Ship look'd like an Hoſpital. It was very richly laden, and valu'd at 1800000 Dollars, and upwards. We found but little Money on Board, beſides the Plate belonging to the Governor of *Luconia*, one of the *Philippine* Iſlands, who was coming home to his own Country, being a Native of *Mexico*.

Tho' this was the richeſt Prize that ever was taken, yet we did not know well what to do with it. It would be an Impoſſibility to work her into the North Sea, or back again to the *Eaſt Indies*, without farther help; for we had more Priſoners by two to one, than we had Sailors on Board. So we once more advis'd with *Don Pedro*, who counſell'd us to ſend to *Acapulco*,

and have the Ship and Men ranſom'd. We all thought it would be both difficult and dangerous. *Don Pedro* told us there ſhould be neither, and he would undertake to do it. But however, as it was a thing of very great Conſequence, we deſir'd he would tell us in what manner it ſhould be done; Why as thus, (ſaid he) I'll take the Bark, with the Captain of the *Spaniſh* Man of War, the Quondam Governor, and one or two more of the beſt Quality, who ſhall make the Caſe known to the City of *Acapulco*, and no other way but by Letter; for I will ſuffer but one of them to go on Shore, and I'll take care to order it well enough to give you Notice, if they ſhould ſend any Force againſt us, tho' there is no Danger they ſhould. For, added he, they have no Man of War within two hundred Leagues of 'em, that which was taken being all they had to guard their Coaſt. We were well ſatisfied with his Reaſons, and gave him leave to proceed as he thought fit; and accordingly the next Day he ſet Sail with thoſe Perſons mention'd along with him. And by the Advice of all, we follow'd him, being very well convinc'd by the *Spaniards* themſelves, there was nothing of Force to be apprehended. I had fitted up the *Spaniſh* Man of War again, and reſolv'd to keep her, and diſpoſe of the Bark. Therefore, aſſoon as we came within Sight of Land, I order'd every thing to be taken out of her, and put on Board the *Spaniard*, who we found was a very good Sailor.

The Day following *Don Pedro* came on Board, with ſeveral Merchants and Perſons of Quality, to treat about the Ranſom of the Prize; and we agreed for 1200000 Dollars, after we had taken ſeveral Bales of rich Goods out of her. The Money was to be paid in ſix Days, and we were to ſtay where we rode; for I did not much care to truſt 'em too far.

In

In the mean time we ſent all their ſick and wounded on Shore. The Bark we diſpos'd of for Proviſion, and other Neceſſaries, and took the Opportunity of waiting for the Money to Water our Ships. At the Time appointed, the Money came, and we ſurrender'd the Ship to the *Spaniards*. Now we agreed by joint Conſent to go home, for we were all rich enough, and every one of the Crew thought ſo: Yet we reſolv'd to touch at St. *Salvador* on the Coaſt of *Braſil* (and make our Way through the *Magellan* Straits) as well to take in ſome Refreſhments, as to diſpoſe of the reſt of our Goods, and careen our Veſſels.

Accordingly we put our Deſign in Execution, and made the beſt of our Way for the Straits of *Magellan*, and diſcover'd thoſe noted Clouds, which are a ſure Guide to Sailors, the third of *May*. We found the Weather extreamly cold, and the Mountains cover'd with Snow; but we were well provided with good Liquors, and all convenient Cloathing. We anchor'd in *Port Famine*; formerly call'd *Knight's Bay*, by the *Dutch* in a Voyage 1598, with a Fleet of five Sail; where meeting with many Troubles, and to eternize the Memory of the Voyage, (it being the firſt the *Dutch* made to thoſe Straits) the Admiral knighted ſix of the Officers, by the Title of Knights of the furious Lion. The Oaths they receiv'd at the Ceremony were, never to do, or conſent to do, any thing againſt their Honours, or to prejudice their preſent Voyage, to expoſe their Lives for the Service of their Commonwealth, and to do their utmoſt in driving the *Spaniards* from their golden World. They were inſtall'd on Shore, with a Sea green Garter, and a Table built, with their Names engrav'd on it.

We ſaw ſeveral of the Inhabitants, who were eaſily prevail'd upon to come on Board us. But I could find nothing extraordinary in their Height, as is fabulouſly reported. The talleſt I could ſee among them did not exceed

exceed six Foot. They are certainly a poor miserable People, but very harmless; and I am apt to believe all former Stories of their monstrous Height and Cruelty to be Fables.

We got through the Straits once more into the North Sea, and by Degrees came into a warmer Climate. But a terrible Storm overtook us, just as we were in Sight of *Pepy*'s Island, which drove us within Sight of Port *Desire*, upon the Continent; and therefore we thought it the safest way to run into the Bay, which accordingly we did, and came to an Anchor in seventeen Fathom Water.

At the South Side of the Port, lies *Penguin* Island, so call'd from a multiplicity of those Birds resorting there. Our Men went on shore, and in three Hours time brought on board five hundred of the Fowls, and several thousands of their Eggs, which prov'd delicious Food. They are call'd *Penguin*, not from their Fatness, as some Authors affirm, but from their Whiteness mix'd with black. They are about the bigness of a Goose, weighing between nine and fourteen Pound; and tho' their chief Diet is Fish, yet they have no fishy Taste. Their Skin is very thick, their Bill is like that of a Raven, tho' not altogether so crooked; their Neck is short and thick, and the rest of their Body resembles a Goose, excepting the Wings, which are only two Stumps cover'd with Feathers, which they make Use of in Swimming. Their Feet are black, like those of a Swan. They breed in Holes of the Rocks, which are so numerous, there is no walking hardly for fear of falling into them. When they walk on Shore 'tis upright, with their Wings hanging down, so that they appear in that Posture like small Pigmies. We staid but two Days here, and then steer'd our Course for *Rio Janeiro*, or the River of *January*, intending to touch at St. *Sebastian*'s first, and if we did not succeed there, to sail for

for St. *Salvador*. When we arriv'd there, the *Portugueze* would not admit us to enter the Bay, but fir'd ſeveral Guns from the Forts laden with Shot, to deter us from anchoring; we could not imagine the meaning of it, but however we left 'em in that Humour, and ſteer'd for St. *Salvador*, and in one and twenty Days we diſcover'd *Praya de Zumba*, a Place very eaſily known from a Number of white Spots, which appear like Linnen hung out to whiten, or dry.

We paſt Fort St. *Anthony*, and ſaluted it with eleven Guns, which return'd us an equal Number, without the charge of Shot, and came to an Anchor within half a League of the City; which we alſo ſaluted with eleven Guns, and receiv'd but ſeven in Return.

By Advice of the Officers, we ſhar'd among the Sailors a thouſand Pieces of eight a Man, which pleas'd 'em exceedingly. The next Day, I went to wait on the Governor, who receiv'd me very civilly, and deſir'd I would dine with him. We were very magnificently ſerv'd, and a Band of *Italian* Muſic play'd all the while. After Dinner I made my Preſents, which he accepted of very kindly, but when I came to treat about our Commerce, he flatly deny'd me, telling me it was againſt the King of *Portugal*'s expreſs Orders, to ſuffer any Trading with Foreigners. I begg'd his Pardon, if it was not to be comply'd with. He would have return'd my Preſent, but I preſs'd him to accept it in ſo obliging a manner, that he did; and told me in *French*, that ſince he ſaw my Generoſity, he would comply with me. He immediately ſent for ſeveral Merchants, and took 'em into his Cloſet, where they ſtay'd ſome time. When they came out again, the Governor told me thoſe Gentlemen would go on Board, and view our Commodities, and if we could agree, he would be anſwerable for the Money. One of the Perſons ſeem'd to be of a more free and open Diſpoſition than the *Portugeze*.

tugueze generally are. (Tho' moſt of the Inhabitants of St. *Salvador* affect the Manners of the *French.)* We ſoon made an End of our Bargain, and my merry Merchant would oblige me to go a-ſhore and ſup with him that Night. He preſs'd me ſo heartily, that I could not refuſe him; and accordingly I went with only my two *Indian* Servants, who began to be underſtood in *Engliſh.*

When we arriv'd at the Merchant's Houſe, I was ſurpriz'd to find it ſo magnificent. He led us into a handſome Summer-houſe in the Garden, where he told me we were to ſup; and, ſaid he, to convince you that you are welcome, I'll bring my Wife and Daughter to keep us Company, which is reckon'd as a thing extraordinary among us. But, added he, I have been in *England* and *France*, and I find the Women are not the leſs honeſt, for having their Liberty. I told him, I thought Conſtraint did but whet their Inventions to gain their Deſires. Said he, I am of your Mind, therefore give 'em all the Liberty they deſire, and I can't find I have had any Reaſon to repent it.

In a little time he uſher'd in the two Ladies, his Wife and Daughter, both very beautiful, and notwithſtanding the Heat of the Climate, very fair. The Wife ſeem'd about five and thirty, the Daughter about ſixteen, and they both ſpoke very good *French.* Our Converſation was kept up with all the Spirit I was capable of: I ſoon diſcover'd a great deal of Wit in them both, and made 'em my Compliment in finding Ladies ſo extraordinary in ſo remote a Part of the World.

When we had ſupp'd, the Merchant (whoſe Name was *Don Jaques)* told me it was his Cuſtom to provide Beds for his Gueſts, as well as Supper: And after we had walk'd a Turn or two round the Garden, we all retir'd to our ſeveral Apartments.

The

The next Morning we drank Chocolate together, and I invited *Don Jaques*, with his Wife and Daughter, to dine with me on Board the next Day, which he conſented to. I now begg'd Leave to be gone; but it being very hot, he had provided me a Silk *Palanquin*; which is a Thing like a Hammock, with a Canopy over it, carry'd by two Blacks, with each a Reſt to hang it on while they take Breath. This is all the Vehicle in Uſe at St. *Salvador*, by reaſon of the Unevenneſs and Steepneſs of the Situation.

I prepar'd for them with all the Magnificence I could the next Day. And when they ſaw the Variety of Diſhes, dreſs'd after the *Engliſh* Manner, they were mightily pleas'd; and, to add to their Satisfaction, the Muſick I had on Board play'd ſeveral elegant Pieces, accompany'd with the Trumpet I had got from on Board the *Spaniſh* Prize, (for notwithſtanding his being Trumpeter to the Garriſon of *Baldivia*, yet he was better pleas'd to be where he was.) We drank the King of *England*, and the King of *Portugal*'s Health ſeveral times, with the Diſcharge of our Cannon: And when the Time for their going on Shore came, I faſten'd a ſmall Preſent of ſeveral ſorts of Silk upon the Wife and Daughter. *Don Jaques* perceiv'd what I was about, and merrily ſaid, That is not fair; we did not pay you for your Company Yeſterday, and yet I believe it was as valuable as that you receiv'd to-day, at leaſt in my Opinion; I ſha'n't anſwer for the Ladies, ſaid he, they are both capable of ſpeaking for themſelves. I receiv'd many Compliments on all Hands; but not dealing much in them, I am very willing to forget 'em.

In a Day or two after *Don Jaques* came on Board, and told me the Money for the Goods was ready, but I ſhould not have it, unleſs I came my ſelf to receive it. I accordingly went with him, and he made me continue

tinue there all Night, where we had the Converſation of the Ladies as before.

When I was going away the next Day, he told me he ſhould ſoon find if any thing elſe beſides Money had the Power to bring me to ſee him. I told him, to convince him of that, I would come and dine with him the next Day; which accordingly I did. After Dinner I expreſs'd a Deſire of ſeeing the moſt remarkable Places in the City, which he comply'd with, and order'd two *Palanquins* to carry us.

The City of St. *Salvador*, the Capital of *Braſil*, is ſituated in the Bay of *All-Saints*, in 12 Degrees 45 Minutes Southern Latitude. It is divided into two Towns, the upper and the lower. The Streets are ſtrait, and pretty broad, but moſt of them very ſteep; and all the Goods are hoiſted in and out of the Veſſels by Machines for that purpoſe. It was formerly under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*, but taken from them by the *Dutch* in 1624, and pretty well fortified by them; yet notwithſtanding that, the *Spaniards* retook it the next Year. I could not learn how long the *Portuguese* have poſſeſs'd it, but they all agree upwards of fifty Years. They have made it a regular fortify'd Place, and very ſtrong; having five Forts beſides the Caſtle, well ſtor'd with Cannon, and other Ammunition, and ſmall Arms for ten thouſand Men. This is the uſual Seat of the Viceroy of *Braſil*; but when I was there it was without one, tho' he was expected every Day.

The Cathedral is a magnificent Pile of Building, finely adorn'd, and painted after the modern Manner. The *Jeſuits* Church is a noble Structure, all of *European* Marble; with a fine Organ, the Pipes gilt. There are many more fine Churches, twenty in all, beſides ſeveral Convents and Monaſteries.

This Place is alſo the Reſidence of a Biſhop, who has a handſome Palace; and for the Reverend the Clergy,

Clergy, I never ſaw ſuch a Number for the bigneſs of the Place any where, as *Benedictines*, *Franciſcans*, *Carmelites*, *Auguſtins*, *Capuchins*, *Dominicans*, and *Barefoot Fryars*; (tho' I think moſt of the People I ſaw there wore no Stockings.) There are three Nunneries, well ſtor'd with Nuns, but not to be ſeen; nor hardly any Women in the Town, but common Whores, or black Slaves; for the *Portugueze* lock up their Wives and Daughters as carefully as they do their Money, and would have none look upon them but themſelves; except my Friend *Don Jaques*; which is ſomething the more extraordinary.

It is a Place of great Trade to *Guinea*, and other Parts, and is accounted one of the richeſt Cities in the King of *Portugal*'s Dominions. By moderate Account there may be about 20000 Whites, (or I ſhould ſay *Portugueze*, for they are none of the whiteſt,) and about treble that Number of Slaves.

Don Jaques would make me take five Days up in viewing the ſeveral Parts of the City, and oblig'd me to be at his Houſe without going on Board during that Time. Some Part of the Day we play'd at *Ombre*, a Game mightily in Vogue among the *Spaniards* and *Portugueze*, and a very entertaining Game for three, invented by the jealous *Spaniards* for that Number, to prevent any clandeſtine Doings between two. But alas! I believe there are more Opportunities gain'd than loſt by it.

We had provided every thing we wanted now, and began to prepare for our Departure.

Don Jaques was very ſorry to loſe me, he told me; and indeed it was with ſome Regret I left him; for his Civility had drawn from me a Friendſhip inſenſibly. I went to take Leave of the Governor, who made me a Preſent of *American* Sweetmeats, and begg'd, I would dine with him, which I could not in good Manners deny. When Dinner was over, *Don Jaques* was ſo obligingly

Years more, leave off Traffick and live quiet in the World. But he begg'd I would write to him aſſoon as I arriv'd in *Europe*, and let him know the Place I had choſe to live in; for, added he, let it be where it will, if it is ever my Fortune to arrive ſafe in *Europe*, I'll take another Voyage only for the Hopes of ſeeing you. I return'd him the Acknowledgment due to ſo much Friendſhip, and we parted with Tears on both ſides.

Aſſoon as I had got on Board, the Wind being fair we weigh'd and ſtood out of the Bay. When we were out at Sea, a Letter was brought me written in *French*, the Tranſlation of which is as follows.

SIR,

I Was reſolv'd to make Tryal of you before I ſuffer'd my Heart to chuſe you for a Friend; and I am ſo well convinc'd of the Sincerity of your Soul, that I will confide in you a Secret dear to my Repoſe. I had an Amour with a beautiful Lady before I was marry'd, that produc'd the Bearer of this Letter. I have kept him conceal'd from my Family hitherto; but the Perſon I truſted with his Education and this Secret, being dead, I fear'd I ſhould find ſome Difficulty to conceal him any longer here: Therefore, depending upon your good Nature and Friendſhip, I have ventur'd to ſend him to you, with Sufficient to bear his Expences in his Education, which I would have ſuitable to the Eſtate I have in my Power to give him. I ſhall ever own this Obligation, and always think it my greateſt Happineſs to ſubſcribe my ſelf

Your ſincere Friend and Servant,

Jaques de Ramires.

I muſt own I was very much ſurpriz'd at this Epiſtle, and could not imagine his Reaſons for concealing it from

from me. I order'd the Perſon that brought the Letter to be conducted in, and immediately enter'd my Cabin one of the beautifulleſt Boys I had ever ſet my Eyes on. He ſeem'd about Fifteen, his Hair fair and long, curling down his Shoulders: In ſhort, every Feature ſo exact and uniform, and ſo innocent withal, that I was amaz'd. At laſt I took him by the Hand and embrac'd him, and told him for his Father's ſake he ſhould be as dear to me as my own Son. But finding he did not anſwer me, for I ſpoke to him in *Engliſh*, I repeated the ſame in *French*. He return'd me Thanks, and ſaid he did not doubt but he ſhould find it ſo.

After ſome time, he deliver'd me a Casket, in which were Jewels to the Value of five thouſand Piſtoles, and a little Box which contain'd a thouſand Moidores. I told him I would take as much Care of them as if they were my own.

Theſe, Sir, ſaid the Youth, are deſign'd to bear my Charges. Then ordering another Box in, had it open'd, and told me what it contain'd was a Preſent from his Father to me. When I examin'd it, I found ſix Silver Diſhes, and three dozen of Plates of the ſame Metal; a dozen of Knives, Forks, and Spoons in Gold, and half a dozen of Gold Sweet-meat Plates. In a larger Box was variety of all maner of Conſerves and Cordials; and I was informed he had made ſmall Preſents to every Officer in the Ship, and to the common Sailors a Week's freſh Proviſion, with Liquor in proportion. I was amaz'd at his Bounty, for his Preſent to me was what a Prince might have receiv'd. I thought it was my Duty to ſhew all the Kindneſs I was capable of to the Son of ſo generous a Father; therefore I order'd him a Field-Bed in my own Cabin; and his Behaviour was ſo engaging, that I felt as much Tenderneſs for him as if he had really been my own Child; and having Skill in Surgery, I truſted

obligingly preſſing for me to ſup with him the laſt Time, that I could not refuſe; but I begg'd he would excuſe my ſtaying all Night, and he gave me his Word he would not preſs me. I ſent one of my *Indians* to order the Boat to fetch me at Ten that Evening.

When the time of my Stay was expir'd, I took my Leave of *Don Jaques* and the Family, after having forc'd him to accept of a Gold Watch, and the Ladies a Preſent of each a Diamond Ring, that I receiv'd from the Governor of *Luconia*, for my Civility in returning him his Plate and Jewels, when we took the *Acapulco* Ship in the *South-Sea*.

Well, ſaid *Don Jaques*, I ſee you will pay for your Board in ſpight of my Teeth. I had taken Leave of the Wife and Daughter before, who had left us in Tears. I muſt own I thought my ſelf very much oblig'd for their Tenderneſs; and it drew ſuch a deep Melancholy upon my Face, with Thoughts of my dear Wife, that *Don Jaques* imagin'd it was Grief for parting with him and his Family. I did not take any Pains to undeceive him. Well, ſaid he, I ſee a Friendſhip may be contracted in a few Days, as well as Love, eſpecially where there is a Harmony of Souls.

We had agreed to correſpond together, and I had undertaken to ſend him ſome *European* Goods, if it pleas'd God to guard me ſafe to *Europe*. I had continu'd longer with *Don Jaques* than I had intended to do, therefore, whatever Violence I did my ſelf, I took my Leave. *Don Jaques* tenderly embrac'd me, and was ſo much overwhelm'd with Grief, that I could not forbear ſympathizing with him: But I order'd his Servants, (whom I had liberally rewarded for the Trouble I gave) to ſhut the Door, to prevent their Maſter's going any farther.

I

I walk'd towards the Port very melancholy, though with ſome Precipitation; but was rouz'd out of it by one of my *Indians* crying, Maſter, take a Care, take a Care! I turn'd about, and ſaw four *Portugueze* purſuing us. I made a Stand, and drew my Sword, took my Cloak from my *Indian*, and put it acroſs my Arm to defend my ſelf the better. They all four attack'd me at once; but my *Indians*, whom I had order'd to wear Swords on Shore, fell upon 'em furiouſly, and diſpatch'd two of 'em immediately; and I had made a ſhift to drop a third, though not without receiving ſeveral Wounds. The fourth ran for it; but my *Indians* being as nimble-footed as Does, ſoon overtook him, and dragg'd him down the Hill by the Hair of his Head; while he cry'd out all the while, *Miſericordia! Miſeridia!* The Noiſe we made had brought up my Boat's Crew, who were all arm'd with Piſtols and Cutlaſſes; and the Guard coming in the mean time, and ſeeing my *Indians* dragging the Fugitive, fell upon us: But my Crew and *Indians* charg'd 'em ſo furiouſly, that they ſoon put 'em to Flight, though treble our Number: Though this avail'd us but little, for the whole Garriſon was coming down upon us. I then order'd my Crew to reſiſt no more, but ſubmit to 'em; for as we were Innocent, I did not much fear to come off clear.

The Buſtle had rouz'd *Don Jaques*, and his Servants, who were ſoon inform'd of the Condition I was in, and he came in good time to interpoſe his Authority; for the *Portugueze* began to be outragious. But the Governour had ſent a Gentleman to bring us before him: And accordingly I went, accompanied by *Don Jaques*. But the Wounds I had received bled ſo much, that they were oblig'd to carry me to *Don Jaques's*, and ſend for a Surgeon. My Hurts were not dangerous, but I was very faint with loſs of Blood.

Don

Don Jaques waited on the Governor, and inform'd him of the Condition I was in: But the Governor not underſtanding who was the Aggreſſor, order'd a Guard of Soldiers at the Door of the Houſe where I was. My Boat's Crew ſoon got on Board, and alarm'd both the Ships, who immediately weigh'd and came cloſe to Shore, where they had prepar'd to fire upon the Town, if I was not releas'd inſtantly. I underſtanding the Matter, ſent one to inform them, that the Guard was ſet upon me to ſecure me from the Inſults of the *Portugueze*, till the Truth of the Matter was diſcovered. This would not ſerve their Turn, but a hundred of 'em with the Officers and *Don Pedro*, landed, all well arm'd and vow'd to wait the Event on Shore. The Governor did me the Honour of a Viſit, and enquir'd into the Cauſe; and I inform'd him, as well as my Weakneſs would permit me. When they had examin'd the dead *Portugueze*, they found one of them was Nephew to the deceas'd Viceroy. Upon the Diſcovery of which, the *Portugueze* began to be very much exaſperated, and were hardly reſtrain'd from ruſhing into the Houſe, and tearing me to Pieces; for though they did not regard the Nephew, yet they had a great Veneration for his deceas'd Uncle, who behav'd himſelf with a great deal of Candour in his Poſt, and the Inhabitants mightily regretted his Loſs. The Governor appeas'd their Fury, by telling 'em I ſhould have no Favour ſhewn me if I were guilty, let the Conſequence be what it would. And immediately a Court was ſummon'd to try me, tho' it was Midnight, and I was carry'd there in a *Palanquin*, weak as I was. But I was oblig'd to ſend for my Lieutenant, and tell him that there was no Danger; and alſo order'd him to ſend the Crew on Board again. When we came to the Place of Juſtice, the Governor order'd me a Seat: But the Buſineſs was ſoon ended; for the *Portugueze* we had ſecur'd, own'd that his Maſter had

had deſign'd to murder me, becauſe he was inform'd I was his Rival in the beautiful *Donna Bianca*, (which was the Daughter of *Don Jaquts.*) I was very much ſurpris'd (as well as *Don Jaques*) at this Report, and we both declar'd it was only a jealous Suggeſtion of the Gentleman; which every one came into: And the Grounds he had for it, was my often frequenting *Don Jaques*'s Houſe, upon the ſcore of Friendſhip only, and lodging there.

The Governor handſomely diſmiſt me, and told me he was very ſorry I had been detain'd from my Affairs. I return'd, that I was as ſorry to be the Cauſe of ſo unhappy an Accident, in a Country where I had receiv'd ſo much Civility.

Don Jaques begg'd I would go back to his Houſe, and ſtay till my Wounds were well; but the Governor took us aſide, and ſaid to us in *French*, I know, *Don Jaques*, 'tis your Friendſhip for the Captain that makes you deſire his Company; but, if I might adviſe you, I would have him go on Board upon the Inſtant; for though he is very innocent as to the Matter, yet I doubt ſome of the Deceaſed's Friends or Relations, which are numerous, not having Regard to Juſtice, will contrive ſome Method to diſpatch him out of the Way: for moſt of the *Portugueze* are jealous, malicious, and revengeful, and very ſeldom look into the Merits of the Cauſe.

I thank'd the Governor for his kind Caution; and *Don Jaques*, notwithſtanding his Friendſhip, could not but come into what he had ſaid. I therefore order'd my ſelf to be carried on Board that Moment. It being broad Day, the Governor and his Guard would accompany me to the Water-ſide, but *Don Jaques* would go on Board with me. In the Boat he told me he had ſome Thoughts of coming to reſide in *England*, for ſaid he, I have enough, and therefore I will, in two or three Years

truſted him with the Management of my Wounds; though I had a very good Ship-Surgeon, who ſupply'd him with what he wanted. My Hurts, which were not dangerous, ſoon heal'd, and I recover'd my Strength again. I could not prevail upon young *Don Ferdinand*, (*Don Jaques*'s Son) to go often upon Deck. He ſaid he would rather chuſe to ſtay in the Cabin, where he had *French* Books of his own, and ſome of mine to entertain him; for I had taken my Opportunity to procure ſeveral at St. *Salvador*, and among the reſt a *French* and *Engliſh* Grammar and Dictionary, which mightily pleas'd *Don Ferdinand*, for he had a great Deſire to learn *Engliſh*: I gave him all the Helps I could; and he in return, inſtructed me in the *Portuguez* Language; ſo that in a ſhort time we could diſcourſe in either.

We had reſolv'd to ſteer our Courſe for the Iſland of *Tercera*, the Capital of the *Azores*; and after fifty Days Sail, we diſcover'd the Peak of one of the Iſlands of *Azores*, which is called *Pico*, from the Mountain. It is in the Reſemblance of a Pyramid, and may be diſcovered as many Leagues off as the *Pike of Teneriff*; for we were then by Obſervation thirty Leagues off from it, and yet could ſee it diſtinctly.

In two Days more we diſcover'd the Iſland of St. *Michael*. We were all pleas'd that we had enter'd that Part of the World we call *Europe*, the Birth-place of moſt of us; and what pleas'd us more was, that we had made all our Fortunes.

Auguſt the 19th, 1696, we anchor'd in the Bay of *Angra*, the Capital of the *Azores*, in the Iſland *Tercera*. I can't give any great Commendation to the Port, being I think it a very indifferent one. We did not deſign to ſtay long, only to get ſome Water, and ſome freſh Proviſions; for we were inform'd there was no riding out a Storm there. We got in what we wanted with

all the Expedition we could, while the Weather was favourable.

The City is ſeated at the Bottom of the Bay, under the Brow of a Hill call'd *Monto de Braſil*, or the *Braſil* Mountain; but for what reaſon ſo call'd, I could not be inform'd. It is very well fortify'd, having two ſtrong Caſtles, and eight Batteries beſides, with Guns of thirty Pounds Shot. But it is very indifferently garriſon'd, having no more than two hundred Men in Pay, and moſt wretchedly ſupply'd, having no cloathing for three Years.

The Town is very agreeable, having a Stream of Water running quite through it, which drives ſeveral Mills for the Uſe of the Publick; and almoſt in every Quarter are publick Fountains of excellent-taſted Water. From this Place are brought the fineſt Canary-Birds, tho' leſs than thoſe of the *Canaries*, yet they exceed them far in the Excellency of their Pipes.

Money is very ſcarce here, and conſequently every thing cheap. I bought two Months Biſcuit for the Ships, much cheaper than in any Port of *Europe*. Corn is their chief Commodity, which they ſend to *Portugal*; but for any other Trade, I believe the King of *Portugal* gets but little Advantage.

I was grown ſuch a Proficient in the *Portugueze* Tongue, that I could make a ſhift to be underſtood; and by underſtanding that Language, ſoon found a Gate to the *Spaniſh* Tongue, by the help of *Don Pedro*, who had learnt to ſpeak *Engliſh* very fluently. We got acquainted with one of the Fathers of the *Cordeliers*, who ſhew'd us the Churches, and other things of Note in the City. The Cathedral is a very handſome Building, and well painted, which goes by the Name of St. *Salvador*; and there is no danger of miſſing that Title, and St. *Anthony*, every where among the *Portugueze*. There's no leſs than twenty, beſides the Cathedral;

dral; with four Monasteries, and four Convents, that have each their Chapel beautifully adorn'd. When we had got what Refreshments were wanting, we set sail for the *Straits*, intending to touch no where, before we were got into the *Mediterranean*; and because we met with nothing extraordinary in our Voyage to *Gibraltar*; I will, to divert the Reader, give him, (instead of Bearing of Coasts, Changes of Wind, and unexpected Storms,) the Life of my Companion *Don Pedro Aquilio*; which he related to us during the Voyage, in the following Manner.

THE

THE LIFE OF *Don PEDRO AQUILIO.*

MY Father reſiding in *France*, when the Commotions were ingendring between the King and the Parliament, was made faſt to the Intereſt of Cardinal *de Retz*, by marrying one of his Nieces of a very great Fortune: He had a Hand in moſt of the ſecret Tranſactions of thoſe Times; and wading too deep in thoſe Seas of Trouble, was oblig'd to retire to his native Country. He foreſeeing what would happen, took care of his Affairs accordingly, ſold his Eſtate in *France*, and ſent my Mother to *Sevil*, the Place of his Birth, whither he ſoon follow'd. The King of *Spain* having a very great Regard for him, gave him ſeveral Offices of Honour and Profit; and when I was born, I was Son to the firſt Man in the City. My Father, by living ſo long in *France*, had contracted the Manners of the *French*; and the Formality of the *Spaniard* ſeem'd as ſtrange to him, as if he had been born in another Climate. He had ſeveral Children, tho' none ſurviv'd but my ſelf. When I had Years enough over my Head to fear the

Prejudice of Education, he took a Reſolution of ſending me to the College of the four Nations in *Paris*, to complete my Studies. And the firſt thing I learnt, was to ſhake off all the Cuſtoms of *Spain*, which was ſoon done; for they had taken but ſmall Impreſſion in my Mind, becauſe I found my Father was averſe to them. I contracted a Friendſhip with ſeveral young *French* Noblemen of my own Age; for Parity of Years is the firſt Step to Friendſhip.

When I had reach'd my fifteenth Year, I began to think of a Miſtreſs, to complete my Studies. And, as I found it was a Method among my Companions, to ſupplant each other in their Females without any Animoſity, I ſet my ſelf ſo willingly about it, that out of half a dozen *Madonas*, I made my ſelf Maſter of ſix of 'em. This occaſion'd many Plots and Contrivances to regain the flying Fair Ones: Tho' I perceiv'd much Money laid out in Preſents had a prevailing Force with 'em. We had our Allowance paid quarterly, and getting all my Companions into Gaming, I had the good Fortune to ſtrip 'em all. They ſeem'd to be a little uneaſy, in loſing their Miſtreſſes and Money too; and my telling 'em, as I had got the Females, I ſhould have moſt Occaſion for Money, ſignify'd nothing, but they all begg'd it as a great Favour, that I would lend 'em half what I had won, to be repaid the next Quarter; which to oblige 'em, I comply'd with, and to play we fell again; but Fortune chang'd her amiable Look from me, and I ſoon loſt all I had won, with my own Share too. The fickle Dame favour'd one of the Company, that would not lend any of us a Penny. This chagrin'd the reſt very much. But to prevent any more Importunity, he went away to his own Chamber, leaving Room in all our Pockets for the Devil to dance a Saraband, for we had not one Croſs to keep him out; and what was our greateſt Mortification, the Holi-

days

lidays were approaching, that us'd to give us the Opportunity of rambling into the Country. The Perſon that won our Money happen'd to be the laſt that was added to our Society; and tho' he had not been long among us, we began to be tir'd of him, as much from his odd Humours, as his Effeminacy. I at laſt thought of a Project to be reveng'd on him, and it was very much approv'd by the reſt of my Companions. The Holidays being come, we deſign'd for our Country Rendezvous; but he that bore the Purſe would not go with us, without we could produce every one ſo much Money. This put us to our Shifts again: But my Man, who was an arch Wag, begg'd that I would accept of what he had; for I had been ſo lucky as to have paid him his Wages before my Loſs. I accepted of his Offer, and took from him ten *Lewis d'Ors*: We contriv'd it ſo well, that they were ſhewn to old Sir *Snip*, from every Perſon of our Society. Well, ſaid he, fixty *Lewis d'Ors* will do our Buſineſs; but who ſhould be the Purſe-bearer, was what he cavill'd at; and not caring to truſt any of us, (and we reſolv'd not to truſt him) he pitch'd upon my Man to be Caſh-keeper for us all. And accordingly he put down in his Pocket-book, ſo much Money in Bank, receiv'd of ſuch and ſuch Perſons, when in Reality he had but twenty *Lewis d'Ors*.

When we had contriv'd every thing, we took Horſe, and rode ſix Leagues that Evening, to the Place where we deſign'd to put in Execution our Project. We had agreed to pay every Night the Expences of the Day, and have it ſet down in my Man's Book. But when he was call'd for, (as we had concerted) no Man was to be found. There was ſtrange Enquiry made to no purpoſe; and we all agreed he had taken the Opportunity to rob us, and run away with our Money. All that we had to do, was to beg of *Snip* to diſcharge the

Houſe. But he declar'd he had not half a Piſtole in his Pocket: which we knew very well, for he had ſew'd all the reſt into his Waiſtcoat. Since it falls out ſo unluckily, ſaid I, don't let us make known our Wants to the Houſe, but go to Reſt, and conſult to-morrow. I lay with *Snip*, for fear he ſhould take it into his Head to ſneak off. In the Night, when I found he was faſt a-ſleep, I bundled up all his Cloaths, and threw them out of the Window to my Man that waited for them.

When Morning came, I deſir'd him to riſe, that we might get all together to conſult; but no Cloaths were to be found. He began to ſtorm and ſwear, but all to no purpoſe; for not one of his Oaths would bring back a Rag of his Cloaths. He told us in his Ravings, that he had loſt ſo much Money, ſew'd up in his Waiſtcoat. We upbraided him for his Covetouſneſs, in not letting us ſhare with him; but it did not ſignify any thing. He threaten'd to go to the *Provoſt*, and have the Landlord ſecur'd; and would have don't, if he had not been naked.

After raving to no Purpoſe, he was oblig'd to go to Bed again, to avoid catching cold. He ask'd us what he ſhould do in his Condition, but all the Advice we gave him brought him no Conſolation.

He was very tall, and large made, and we us'd to call him in Ridicule the *Infant*. He propos'd to ſell his Horſe to cloath him; but being ſo much out of Size, there was not any thing to be had ready made that would fit him: This was ſtill worſe and worſe; and though the Horſe was ſold for twenty *Piſtoles*, we contriv'd it ſo, that my Landlord ſeiz'd the Money for his Reckoning. This put him almoſt beſide himſelf, and he was ready to expire with Vexation.

I pretended to be much concern'd at this Uſage, while the reſt of our Company laugh'd at his Misfortune.

fortune. I ſeem'd to be very angry with them; and told 'em I would do my Endeavour to remedy every thing. I made 'em acquainted, that I had juſt call'd to mind a Perſon, a Friend of mine, that liv'd in the Town, much of the Infant's Size, and I would go to borrow a Suit of Cloaths for him. He ſeem'd very much rejoic'd at this; for he reſolv'd, aſſoon as ever he was dreſs'd, to take up the Landlord, and ſwear the Robbery againſt him.

I went as he ſuppos'd about his Cloaths; and after ſtaying ſome time below, I went up with a Bundle, and ſeem'd very much concern'd that I could not ſucceed. I told the *Infant*, the Gentleman was gone to *Lyons* about Buſineſs of Concern, and had carried all his Cloaths with him. But I had brought him a Maſquerade Habit that he had left behind him.

He expreſs'd ſome Satisfaction at the Sight of it, that he ſhould not be confin'd to lie in Bed. But, ſaid he, if it were not only for the Name of Cloaths, a Man might as well go naked, for there's no ſtirring abroad in this Dreſs.

It was the Habit of a Satyr, that we had made on purpoſe for the Occaſion, before we left *Paris*. When we had equipp'd him, it was as much as I could do to keep my Countenance at the Figure he made; and he ſeem'd very much diſſatisfy'd with it, but however he wore it for the Conveniency of not lying in Bed.

When we were at Dinner, we had many Contrivances to get away, but none feaſable.

I told 'em at laſt I had thought of a Deſign would certainly do our Buſineſs, and make up our Loſſes, if the *Infant* would conſent to it. He readily reply'd, he would ſtick at nothing to do that. Why then, ſaid I, if you'll ſuffer your ſelf to be ſhewn in that Habit, as a Monſter newly arriv'd, I'll anſwer for the Succeſs of it.

After much Talk, he agreed to do it, on this Proviſo, that his Face ſhould be diſguis'd. I told him I would ſtep to my Friend's Houſe, for the Mask that was made to the Habit. I return'd and gave it to him, and he was ſoon ſatisfy'd with the Project.

Notwithſtanding the Buſtle we made, none of the Houſe (but the Landlord) knew any thing of the Matter, and the next Day it was given out about the Town, that a Monſter was to be ſhown in the Afternoon. We had procur'd a Chain, and other Materials to carry on the Joke; and when the Time came to ſhow away, we had ſuch a Concourſe of People to ſee our Monſter (it being in the Holidays) that our Profit gave us ſome Satisfaction. For when the Time of ſhowing was over, our Money amounted to three and twenty *Piſtoles*; and the Monſter behav'd himſelf ſo well with our Inſtructions, that he gave a general Content.

We had taken care he ſhould appear ſo fierce, that none ſhould approach near enough to diſcover the Deceit. We had a great deal of Diverſion at the ignorant People's Suggeſtions. One Country Fellow ask'd how old he was? I told him four Years, three Months and five Days. Lord bleſs me, (cry'd he out) why, by that time he comes to be twenty, no Houſe will be able to hold him.

In fine, we ſhow'd him ſo long, that our Money mounted to upwards of one hundred Pounds, which pleas'd our *Infant* ſo well, that he deſir'd to continue a Monſter all the time of the Holidays. But we reſolv'd to carry the Joke no further, tho' we did not tell him ſo.

We left the *Infant* chain'd to the Poſt of the Window, as uſual, went down to my Landlord, and gave him Inſtructions how to behave himſelf. We took care to ſatisfy him very well for the Trouble he had been at.

We

We all rid away to the next Village, and putting up our Horſes, return'd on Foot, one by one, back again to the Inn; and ſtole up Stairs unperceiv'd by any one but the Landlord. The *Infant*, finding we ſtaid longer than ordinary, began to make a great Noiſe; which my Landlord hearing, ſent up one of his Servants, that knew nothing of the Secret; when the *Infant* ſaw him come in, he made ſeveral Signs to him; but as the Fellow knew nothing of the Jeſt, he did not much like the Action of the *Infant*, but ran down to his Maſter frighted out of his Wits.

We had made Peep holes in the bordering Room, where we could perceive every Action of the *Infant*'s; but he was ſo very much enrag'd, that he ſat down biting his Nails for Vexation; for he began to perceive the Trick we had put upon him. After ſitting melancholy ſome time, he roſe up and endeavoured to undo the Chains; but as they were ty'd cloſe behind, and made faſt to a Staple in the Wall, all his Efforts prov'd vain. All our Care was to contain from laughing, which was a very hard Task. When he found he could not free himſelf, Rage intirely poſſeſs'd him; and the Noiſe he made with ſtamping, and rattling his Chains, brought up ſeveral of the Servants arm'd, who open'd the Door cautiouſly; but notwithſtanding their Valour, ran away as ſoon as they perceiv'd his menacing Action; and tumbling over one another, took the ſhorteſt Way down Stairs.

When we thought he had Mortification enough, we ſent my Landlord into him with a good Horſewhip, and a Letter in his Hand. As ſoon as he had got within the Door, he ſpoke after this manner, in a Landlord-like Tone. I was pretty well aſſur'd at the Beginning that thou wert a rank Cheat; but now I am convinc'd of it, I will chaſtiſe thee firſt, and reaſon with thee afterwards, like other criminal Judges, puniſh firſt,

and inquire into the Demerits of the Cauſe afterwards, that Juſtice may not wait for any body.

Theſe Words were follow'd with ſome ſmart Strokes, and the Dialogue ſoon began to be in much Confuſion; for between the Roaring of the *Infant*, the Bawling of my Landlord, and the Smacking of the Whip, it was a continual Jargon of Noiſe: And we were oblig'd all of us to own, our Hoſt executed his Commiſſion to a Hair.

When he had a little recover'd Himſelf, he began to reaſon with his Patient, who, that he might the better hear him, laid himſelf down on his Pallat to condole his afflicted Body. But their Queſtions being very long, and the Anſwers but ſhort, conſiſting of two Monoſyllables, Ay, or No, I will not trouble you with the Relation.

After their Dialogue was over, he gave him the Letter, which diſcovered our Deſign upon him. He was thunder-ſtruck at our Combination; and utter'd ſuch Imprecations of Revenge, that my Landlord was oblig'd to anſwer him with his Whip, which ſoon reduc'd him to Reaſon.

We began to be tir'd with our *Infant*, and ſo put an End to our Diverſion, and his Torture, by ſending him his Cloaths; tho' ſome of our Company would have had him gone to *Paris* in that Trim.

In a few Days after the Frolick was over, he commenc'd a Suit of Law againſt us all, for a Robbery; but the Judges finding it only a Trick of Mirth, fined every one of the Defendants ſix Livres a-piece, and every one to pay his own Coſts. This but enrag'd the *Infant* the more, and he began to meditate a more pernicious Revenge; for now he appear'd the Ridicule of the whole City, and he could never ſtir without a Train of Boys at his Heels.

The

The firſt Inſtance of it was as follows: My Servant having ſome Intrigue on his Hands, had made bold with my Cloaths to carry it on; and coming Home pretty late, was ſhot through the Back with a Piſtol-Ball, juſt as he was entring the College Gates. Tho' it was well meant, the poor Fellow eſcap'd with Life, yet he lay dangerouſly ill for ſeveral Days. He could give no Account of the Affair at all, not having ſeen the Perſon that wounded him. But the Accident made me very uneaſy, for I was convinc'd the Favour was meant to me. This made me cautious how I ventur'd out of the College; for it was eaſy to imagine it was a Proof of the *Infant*'s Reſentment, who had left the College upon the Loſs of his Tryal.

I began now to repent our Confederacy againſt him, and wrote him a Note to aſſure him of my Contrition, with my Share of the Money we had taken from him. He receiv'd the Caſh, and ſent me Word he heartily forgave me. Imagining him ſincere, I ventur'd into the City, and ſoon frequented my old Rendezvous; but I had ſo much Regard for my ſelf as to get to College betimes.

One Night as I was going Home, four Men in Vizor Masks ruſh'd out from behind a Wall of a Houſe that was building; they all fir'd upon me, and ran away as ſoon as they had diſcharged their Pieces. I muſt confeſs, at firſt, Fear made me imagine my ſelf no Man of this World: But by Degrees getting over my Apprehenſion, I found I had not got any Hurt. This Accident to me ſeem'd prodigious; for they were all four ſo near me, that ſeveral Grains of the Powder ſtuck in my Face. But I was brought out of my Labyrinth of Thought, when I receiv'd the following Letter the next Morning.

SIR,

I Muſt own my ſelf one of thoſe unfortunate Men, that, for want of better Employment, receive Money as the Price of Blood. Though this I can ſay with a clear Conſcience, I never have yet put my Trade in Practice. Yeſterday Morning I was ſent for to the Houſe of Monſieur Gomberville, *commonly call'd the* Infant, *who employed me to take away your Life; and, that he would be ſure of the Execution, made one of the four that fir'd upon you laſt Night; but as I had the ordering of our Arms, I took care nothing ſhould be put in 'em that was hurtful. The Acquaintance I had with your noble Father, made me the more cautious concerning his Son. I beg in Juſtice to me you would keep your Chamber, and cauſe it to be reported that you are dangerouſly wounded. I need not caution you to be careful of your ſelf, for the* Infant's *Malice ſeems to me implacable. We never have any Words made of theſe Things, becauſe we know how to revenge our ſelves; therefore let no one elſe know the Contents of this, and be thankful for your Life from*

Jaques Marriot.

When I had read the Letter, I order'd my Servant to bring the Bearer before me; where I ſoon found, by his manner of Talking, that a little Money would be very acceptable to the Sender; and therefore I ſent him ten Piſtoles, with my humble Service, giving him to know that I would exactly comply with the Contents.

I began now ſeriouſly to think on the Danger I had inconſiderately drawn upon my ſelf, for an innocent Frolick; and that it would be but ill truſting to the *Infant*'s Reſentment. I gave out that I was dangerouſly wounded; and the better to carry it on, I got a Surgeon (a Friend of mine) to viſit me frequently.

When

When I had kept my Chamber long enough for the time of my Cure, I ventur'd abroad, but never without four or five of my Friends for a Guard, and came home in very good Time.

During my Confinement, I receiv'd Letters of Condolement from ſeveral of my Miſtreſſes; and when they heard of my Recovery, as many of Reproach for not coming to viſit them as uſual. One in particular, and my favourite Fair, was very preſſing for a Meeting; and her chief Reaſon was to pay her with my Preſence for the Affronts ſhe had ſuſtain'd from the *Infant* upon my Account. I ſent her Word I would not fail waiting on her the *Sunday* following, after Duſk. Accordingly when the time came, I ſtole out without any of the College Marks on, and arriv'd ſafe at my *Madona's*.

After Supper, and two or three Bottles of *Hermitage*, we went to Bed; and when we had made our ſelves as merry as we could in the dark, I addreſs'd my ſelf to Sleep: But notwithſtanding my willingneſs to receive the gentle God, he ſtill flew from me, and ſeveral Hours paſs'd without cloſing my Eyes.

About Midnight, I thought I heard Whiſpers in the next Room, which very much alarm'd me: But my Fears were trebly increas'd, when, looking through a Chink of the Door, I diſcover'd the *Infant*, and four other Fellows with Masks in their Hands, ſpreading Saw-duſt on the Floor, and on the Table lay ſeveral Sacks.

I ſoon imagin'd what their Preparations meant, therefore conſulted my Safety as well as I could, in the Confuſion of my Thoughts.

I went always well arm'd ſince the laſt Rencounter, having two Brace of Piſtols in my Pockets, a good cutting Sword, and a Stilletto. But I was confounded when ſearching for my Cloaths where I had laid them, none could be found. I now began to think of Death ſeriouſly.

ſeriouſly, and beg Pardon ſincerely of God for all my Sins; for I knew it would be Madneſs to think of eſcaping, naked as I was, without any Thing for my Defence. In the Chaos of my Thoughts I remembred a Cloſet which had a Window that look'd into the *Seine*; and tho' it was three Stories from the River, yet, as I could ſwim, I thought it better to truſt Providence by leaping into the Water, than thoſe Cutthroats. I ſtole ſoftly to the Window, but to my great Conſternation found it too faſt for me to open; but by good Fortune in groping about, I found my Cloaths. I put 'em on with a great deal of Precipitation, and having prepar'd my Arms, reſolv'd not to die alone.

I waited ſome Time before the Chamber Door open'd. When it was open, I could perceive 'em coming in with Masks on, and the foremoſt with a Dark-lanthorn. I did not think fit to wait till they ſhould diſcover I was not in the Bed, but ruſh'd on the firſt, and ſhot him dead on the Spot; and in two Seconds of a Minute, diſpatch'd two more, one with my Sword, and the other with one of my Piſtols; and had made as quick work with the other two, but they fell on their Knees, and begg'd for Mercy; which I granted, on Condition that one ſhould tye the other, which was readily comply'd with; when that was done, I bound the other my ſelf, and coming to ſecure my falſe Miſtreſs, found her expiring in the Bed. She had Breath enough left to tell me, ſhe had been caught in her own Trap; for deſigning to poiſon me in the Wine I drank, the Servant had miſtaken the Bottle, and given it to her.

I aſk'd her the Reaſon of her Hatred to me, being, as I remember'd, guilty of no Fault. She told me, the *Infant* had inform'd her that I was falſe to her, which converted her Love to the moſt implacable Hatred. I muſt own, this Woman was Miſtreſs of my Heart, and I had ſeveral Proofs of her Sincerity; but ſhe was of a

Temper

Temper compos'd of Fire and Fury. She further told me, that I had rais'd her Rage to that height, that ſhe was reſolv'd to put an end to my Life her ſelf; not caring to truſt her Revenge to any Hands but her own.

She begg'd I would forgive her, and immediately expired. I examin'd my two intended Murderers, and found they were Servants to the *Infant*, and compell'd to what they did; therefore I reſolv'd to pardon 'em.

I thought once of going to the Provoſt, and give him a particular Account of the Action; but one of the Fellows inform'd me, he was a near Relation of the *Infant*'s, and had a very great Love for him, which made me apprehend his Paſſion would overcome his Juſtice. Therefore I reſolv'd the next Morning to ſet out for *Spain*, which I put in practice before Day, and gave my Man Orders to follow me.

I left *Paris* with this Reflection, that from the meaneſt trifling Accident, often dreadful Effects follow'd; and a Woman once provok'd was the moſt dangerous Enemy a Man could have.

I met with nothing extraordinary in my Voyage to *Calis*; but when I arriv'd at *Sevil*, I was inform'd, my Father, who was Governor of that City, was at his Country-houſe about ſix Leagues off.

Tho' I was very much fatigu'd with my Journey, I reſolv'd to wait on him that Night. I hir'd a Mule (for I had my Servant's Cloaths on) and ſet out. But my Beaſt being none of the beſt, tir'd with me about a League before I came to the Villa where my Father reſided.

I left him in the adjacent Village, and purſu'd my Journey on Foot. As I was willing to get to my Father's Houſe, I made all the Speed I could. And tho' it was very dark, I knew the Way perfectly.

I overtook two Men in a narrow Lane, that call'd to me, asking why I had ſtay'd ſo long, and where was

I fancy'd there was ſomething of Villainy going forward by the Name of Don *Lewis*, being he was an inveterate Enemy of my Father's. I did not anſwer 'em immediately, which brought 'em upon me; they ſoon found their Miſtake. They ask'd me where I was going at that time of Night; I told 'em I was going to *Saragoza*, to my Friends, for I had ſerv'd a Gentleman in *Cadiz*, that had diſcharg'd me, for getting his Maid with Child; and I was obliged to walk all Night, being I had not any Money to pay for a Lodging. I anſwer'd a great many other Queſtions, with the ſame Truth and Simplicity. And after talking ſome time, two more came up to us, and ask'd the others who they had got with 'em. They went all together, and after a little talk, one that ſeem'd to be the Superior, came up to me, and told me, if I would make one of their Enterprize that Night, he would not only reward me well, but take me into his Service; but if I refus'd after he had diſclos'd it to me, they would murder me upon the Inſtant.

I told him I would ſtick at nothing to get Bread. Why then, ſaid Sir Gravity, my Name is Don *Lewis*: I have a mortal hatred to *Ferdinand Aquilo*, Governor of *Sevil*. I have waited many Years for my Revenge, but never could get an Opportunity to execute it till now. He has receiv'd one of my Servants into his Houſe as a Domeſtick, who this Night will open the Door to us, where I ſhall quench my Hatred of him with his Blood; and further, to diſpatch all fear of Reſiſtance, I can aſſure you there are but two more Servants in the Houſe, whom my Fellow has made drunk, which ſhall be order'd ſo, as if they had murder'd their Maſter.

It was well for me that Darkneſs cover'd the Hemiſphere, or the old Devil could have diſcover'd the Confuſion in my Countenance. But notwithſtanding my Conſternation, I told him I ſhould be proud to ſerve him

him in this, or any other Adventure. Gramercy, ſaid the old One, and here's ſomething to encourage thee, (clapping a handful of Dollars into my Hand.)

I'll leave you to gueſs the Confuſion of my Thoughts at this Declaration, and I was caſting about in my Mind, how I ſhould prevent this intended Villainy.

When we arriv'd at my Father's, we found the Treacherous Villain waiting for his Maſter. Aſſoon as ever he ſaw us, he cry'd ſoftly to Don *Lewis*, I am glad your Honour is come; but Don *Ferdinand* is in his Cloſet, and does not intend to go to Bed to-night, becauſe he is to be at *Sevil* early in the Morning, and he has ſhut his Cloſet-door. Why then, ſaid Don *Lewis*, we'll break it open. But, return'd the Servant, he has Arms always ready in his Cloſet, and I fear the Enterprize will be a little difficult, for he's a tough old Blade.

Upon this Account a ſmall Pauſe enſu'd, which gave me Leiſure to think, and to the Old one I utter'd my Thoughts.

Sir, ſaid I, ſubmit this Buſineſs to me, and I'll inform you how I deſign to execute it. Your Servant ſhall accompany me to the Door of his Cloſet, and knock, and aſſoon as ever he opens it, I'll give a good Account of the old Gentleman.

Thou counſelleſt well, reply'd the old Don, and I'll reward thee accordingly when the Work is done. And I ſhall deſerve it, thought I to my ſelf, if my Intention ſucceeds.

Upon this Reſolve, we went into the Houſe, and the Fellow conducted me up Stairs very ſoftly. The Cloſet was at the end of a large Room, the Door of which I bolted on the Inſide with one Hand, and plung'd my Ponyard to the Heart of the Fellow with the other, who drop'd dead at my Feet. At the Noiſe he made in falling, my Father cry'd out Who's there? and ruſh'd out of his Cloſet, with a Piſtol in his Hand. I reply'd, 'Tis I, your Son.

You

You may imagine the Surprize my Father was in at this ſudden Appearance, and to ſee one of his Servants weltring in his Blood, and dead before me. Sir, ſaid I, baniſh your Surprize, and go with me into your Cloſet, where I will inform you of this ſudden, and unlook'd-for Appearance; and muſt farther add, that the Hand of Providence, by me, has ſav'd you from Death.

My Father follow'd me into his Study, without ſpeaking: Where I declar'd, in as few Words as the Time would permit, all that had befallen me that Night; and we ſoon came to a Reſolution what to do.

We took each of us a Blunderbuſs with a brace of Piſtols, went down the back Stairs, and came in upon 'em, a way they little expected. I came firſt into the Hall, as we had concerted.

Aſſoon as the old Wretch ſaw me, he cry'd, Well my Lad, haſt thou diſpatch'd the Villain! Yes Sir, ſaid I, and have drag'd him down that you may behold what I have done. When he heard that, he gave a Leap for Joy, and came running forward to view the pleaſing Sight. But Words cannot expreſs his Looks, when he ſaw my Father confronting him with a Blunderbuſs in his Hand. He ſtood motionleſs, as if he had been turn'd to Stone.

The other three endeavour'd to make their Eſcape, but I diſcharg'd my Blunderbuſs, and ſtopt two of them with my haſty Meſſengers. The Report of my Piece made *Don Lewis* fall down, as imagining himſelf ſlain; the third Perſon finding it impoſſible to eſcape, became deſperate, and like a Stag at Bay defy'd us. He pull'd out a Stilletto, and ran upon me like an angry Lyon, and notwithſtanding I ſhot him in the Breaſt with a Brace of Balls, wounded me in three ſeveral Places; I grappling with him, we came down together upon the Body of *Don Lewis*, who with our Weight

Weight began to cry out; and that Moment had been the laſt of my Life, if my Father had not ran to my Aſſiſtance, and with his Sword nail'd my Antagoniſt to the Pavement.

The Report of our Fire-Arms had waken'd the two drunken Servants of my Father, who came half frighten'd out of their Senſes. By this time *Don Lewis* had recover'd himſelf, and ſeeing Death before him, fell down upon his Knees, and implor'd my Father's Mercy.

Thou baſe Man! reply'd my Father, how canſt thou expect to live after thy barbarous Attempt upon his Life that never wrong'd thee? He told him he did not expect to be forgiven, only to be allow'd a Prieſt, and Confeſſion, and he would die with a hearty Penitence for his Sins.

Wretch! cry'd my Father, thou may'ſt ſee how Heaven abhors thy Fact, by blaſting thy Deſign. This Man thou ſeeſt before thee, whom thou didſt employ in thy black Deſign, is my own Son, whoſe coming hither was like an Angel ſent from Heaven to my Aſſiſtance. I ſee, return'd the *Don*, the Seal of Providence is upon you, and I heartily repent the Crime I intended to commit: And if you will forgive me, and forget what is paſt, I'll eſteem you as the Saver of my Life; and, to unite our Friendſhip, I'll match my Daughter with a noble Dowry to this your Son, and may they ever live happy.

My Father was too much a Gentleman to murder in cold Blood, though he had ſufficient Excuſe on his ſide if he had done it. On the other hand, his Daughter was a very great Fortune, even beyond his Hopes.

After ſome ſmall Pauſe, he made him this Reply. Sir, you know within your ſelf, that you have forfeited your Life by the Law, in ſo baſely attempting mine; but as I can forgive any Injury deſign'd me; if you perform your firſt Promiſe, I am reſolv'd to forgive all that's paſt.

paſt. Sir, reply'd the other (tranſported with Joy) I am ſo much oblig'd to you for my Life, that I will not ſtir out of your Houſe till I have ſign'd Articles of Agreement; and I muſt farther add, that nothing ſets my Shame more before my Eyes than this your Goodneſs.

My Father begg'd he would take a particular Care how he gave way to Hatred; which, by the way, only commenc'd in my Father's getting the better of him in a Law-Suit, and was heighten'd by the King's conferring on him the Honour of the Government of *Sevil*, which *Don Lewis* had ſome Hopes of.

We took care the next Day to let the Country know, that thoſe Fellows that were kill'd had attempted to rob our Houſe, but we having timely Notice had prevented 'em by their Deaths.

The old Gentleman was as good as his Word, for Articles of Agreement were drawn up between 'em, and I had Leave to viſit the Lady when I thought fit. But I was obliged to go back to *Sevil*, to put my ſelf in an Equipage ſuitable to the Occaſion, and *Don Lewis* follow'd after with his Daughter.

I muſt confeſs I was charm'd with her Perſon at the firſt Interview; and the Day was fix'd for our Nuptials, which rejoic'd the whole City of *Sevil*, that two of the nobleſt Houſes were going to bury in Oblivion their long Enmity.

I took the Privilege of an intended Husband in my Viſits to my deſign'd Bride, and in her Converſation found ſhe had no Averſion for me, (at leaſt I thought ſo,) and I promis'd my ſelf the utmoſt Felicity in her Enjoyment.

One Morning, about a Week before the intended Wedding, I came early to wait on her, but was inform'd ſhe was not come out of her Chamber: therefore I reſolv'd to take a Walk in the great Piazza of the

the City, to give her time to dreſs her ſelf; but as I was going out, I obſerv'd the Maid to my Miſtreſs conferring with a Country Fellow; the Sight of me, I obſerv'd, gave the Woman ſome Confuſion. My Heart told me I was concern'd in their Interview, therefore I went to the Corner of the Street, and waited till their Dialogue was over; which did not keep me long, for the Fellow ſoon parted with the Woman, and went out of the Gate that leads to *Cordova*.

I had my Man with me, whom I acquainted with my Fears, ordering him to dog the Fellow, and get out of him, by fair Means or foul, his Buſineſs at *Don Lewis*'s Houſe, and I would follow him on Horſe-back.

Away ran my Man, and I ſoon got my Horſe, and overtook 'em about a League and a half from *Sevil*. When my Man got Sight of me, I obſerv'd he took a little Basket from the Countryman, and ran away over the Fields with it. I fancy'd by that he had ſucceeded in his Commiſſion, ſo turn'd my Horſe and follow'd him.

When I had overtaken him, we went behind a Tuft of Trees a little out of the Road, where he told me he had made the Fellow believe he was ſent by *Tereſa* (the Name of the Maid he was conferring with) to give him Notice that he would be purſu'd by a Cavalier, and forc'd to deliver what he had receiv'd from her, and perhaps be in Danger of loſing his Life; and that he had Orders to conſult with him for his Safety.

The Countryman, being none of the wiſeſt, ſoon diſcovered the whole Affair to my Man, and at Sight of me deliver'd the Basket to him, and ran to a publick Houſe in the next Village, to wait till he could get clear of me, where my Man was to bring him his Baſket again. In the Basket were four Melons, and in one of them we found a Letter very artificially put up, which I took out, and with Terror of Mind read the Contents, which were as follows.

Life

LIFE of my Life, and Treaſure of my Soul! I receiv'd yours, which gave me all the Conſolation my diſconſolate Heart was capable of receiving. But the fatal Moment is approaching, when I muſt give up this Body to another Perſon but without a Heart, which always dwells with you; and be aſſur'd, unleſs ill Uſage force it thence, ſhall ever dwell in the Manſion of your Breaſt. But, my Soul, grieve not; for maugre my Tyrant Husband, I will find Time to ſee the Darling of my Eyes, and in the Pleaſure of thoſe dear Arms forget the dull Embraces of a Husband. Let Ten be the lateſt this Evening, when you ſhall find at the uſual Place, with long expecting Love, your

Iſabella.

I was Thunderſtruck at the reading of this Letter, yet bleſt my providential Stars that guided me to this black Secret, before the Prieſt had join'd our Hands. And, tho' a *Spaniard*, my Reſentment did not riſe to Jealouſy, but my Fancy ran upon the Enjoyment of this falſe Fair one, without the Marriage-Chain. And what prompted me the more to it, was, a Poſtſcript to her Letter, wherein ſhe bad him come in his uſual Diſguiſe, and in the dark. In order to the Accompliſhment of my Deſign, I went into a neighbouring Houſe, and wrote the following Letter, which was put in the Melon in the Room of the other.

My Love,

I Have not Time to write my ſelf, I am ſo guarded by my Father, and my Tyrant Husband that is to be, ſo that I am oblig'd to employ Tereſa. *Don't come to the uſual Place till you hear from me, which ſhall certainly be To-morrow. Adieu, thou Life and Soul of*

Iſabella.

Now

Now all the Hopes I had were, that the Fellow knew what Diſguiſe this amorous Spark wore, and where was the Place of Rendezvous.

I left it all to my Servant, who had Cunning enough to outwit twenty of the Countryman. After I had deliver'd him his Commiſſion, I went back to *Sevil*, full of Hopes and Fears; and in two Hours my Man arriv'd: He gave me a Deſcription of his Converſe with the Countryman, (which was diverting enough) and how happy they were in eſcaping my Hands.

He inform'd me, the amorous Gallant came diſguis'd in the Habit of a Peaſant, and was admitted through the back Garden of *Don Lewis*'s Houſe by the Maid, who always attended the Hour, and convey'd him to her Apartment in the Dark; which was according to my Wiſh: and by Deſcription of the Spark's Perſon, we were not unlike as to Proportion or Age, and Darkneſs would conceal the reſt.

I ſoon provided my ſelf of the Habit I was to wear, and impatiently expected the coming Hour, which came at laſt, though the intervening ones ſeem'd the longeſt of my Life.

I did not wait long before I was admitted by the too-faithful Confident. We went over the Garden to a ſmall Room at the Entrance of the Houſe, where I ſoon diſcover'd my falſe Fair-one, (tho' in the dark.) She was undreſs'd and diſincumber'd of every Lett to Enjoyment. I found, by her eager Kiſſes and Embraces, there was no Parlying requir'd; ſo I e'en fell to and fed very heartily; my Partner in Pleaſure ſeem'd to like what was prepar'd for her; and, before we parted, gave me to underſtand I had done Wonders, and much beyond her Expectation.

When we had dally'd away about four Hours in our Feaſting, the Maid came to tell me it was time to part, which we did, after ſnatching another Morſel.

I went

I went immediately home, was ſoon in Bed, and had no want of any Provocative to Sleep.

When I aroſe in the Morning, I began to weigh maturely the laſt Night's Adventure; but could come to no Reſolution as to the forming my Behaviour to my falſe Miſtreſs: But I reſolv'd to be determin'd by her.

I went to viſit her about Noon, and found her more than ordinary civil to me.

In ſhort, I was ſo charm'd with the Sight of her, that I reſolv'd to give her another Viſit in my Diſguiſe the ſame Night; and all I had to do was to be firſt at the Place.

When the Time came, my Conduſtreſs was as ready as before; but going ſoftly in, ſhe clapt to the Door a little too haſtily, and faſten'd my Coat in't; and to give me the more Uneaſineſs, ſhe the ſame Moment dropt the Key out of her Hand; and though I could ſee where it lay, yet I could not ſtoop for it, becauſe my Coat was ſecur'd in the Door.

After groping about ſome time, ſhe took it up, and open'd the Door to releaſe her Priſoner: But on the very Inſtant my Rival appear'd, and, finding himſelf there before he came, ruſh'd in, and faſten'd upon me.

The Maid, at the Sight of two *Sofia*'s, clapt to the Door in a Fright, and ran ſcreaming away; ſo we had the Happineſs to be lock'd in the Garden together. But however, to make the beſt of a bad Market, (as the Saying is,) I got my Rival down, and belabour'd him with my Fiſts; for, as good Fortune would have it, we had neither of us any offenſive Weapons.

The Noiſe of the Maid, and our buſtling, alarm'd an *Engliſh* Maſtiff that was Watchman to the Houſe, who, without ſaying *By your Leave*, had the Impedence to faſten upon my Rival by the Arm, and worry'd him very handſomely: But, notwithſtanding my

Reaſons

Reaſons to the contrary, I took Pity of him, and by Force of Arms deſtroy'd the Dog; that is, I held him ſo faſt about the Throat with my Hands, that his laſt Breath flew away in a Huff.

My diſguis'd Spark ſeeing himſelf ſo unexpectedly reliev'd, gave me Thanks for his Safety; and, aſſoon as ever he ſpoke, (for we had been ſullen before, neither of us having open'd our Lips) I knew him by his Tongue to be one of my particular Acquaintance.

Why how now, *Don Juan!* ſaid I, how came you thus diſguis'd? Nay, reply'd the *Don*, I ought to ask you the ſame thing. With ſeveral Queſtions and Anſwers we came to a right Underſtanding. If I had known, ſaid he, your Pretenſions here, I ſhould never have made any Attempts to your Prejudice. Come, come, ſaid I, it's very well as it is. So we turn'd that to Mirth and Ridicule, which perhaps others of our Nation would have turn'd to Blood. Our next thing was to make our Eſcape, for the whole Houſe was alarm'd, and coming upon us with their domeſtick Weapons, as Pokers, Spits, Fire ſhovels, *&c.* My Companion led me to a Place of the Garden, where the Wall was ſomething lower than any where elſe; and juſt as we had gain'd the Aſcent, we perceiv'd a Man mounting from the other Side; but my Friend did him the Favour to tumble him down again; he quickly got up, and ran upon him moſt furiouſly with his Poniard, and gave him ſeveral Stabs; but my Friend clos'd with him, wreſted his Weapon from him, and ſtabb'd him to the Heart.

Aſſoon as he was ſped, we made off; but did not go far before my Companion dropt down dead of his Wounds. I was very much griev'd at the Accident, but made the beſt of my way home, for fear I ſhould come into Trouble about it, if I was caught near the dead Bodies.

I went to Bed, but very much perplex'd in Mind, and had no Reſt all Night. But what was my Grief in the Morning, when my Servant brought me Word, my Father and *Don Juan* my Friend were found murder'd, in the Habits of Peaſants, under *Don Lewis*'s Garden-Wall! The Relation depriv'd me of the Uſe of Speech for ſome time, and my Reaſon forſook me. I was more than once going to put an End to my Life, and had certainly done it if I had not been prevented by my faithful Servant. But when my Reaſon return'd again, I began to think of the Adventure with ſome Calmneſs; for though I had all the Grief imaginable for the Loſs of ſo good a Father, yet I was of a Temper not to grieve long at any thing; and then the Fortune I thought my ſelf Maſter of, appear'd ſo lovely to me, that it ſoon dry'd up my Tears.

The City imagin'd my Father came by his Death through *Don Lewis*'s Means, as remembring the antient Enmity of the two Houſes; and being found ſo near his Houſe, ſtrengthen'd the Opinion of every Body; and I was the only Perſon ſatisfy'd to the contrary.

The Servants that brought in my Father's Body, gave me ſeveral Papers found in his Pockets; among which were two Letters that partly let me into the Truth of this unhappy Adventure. The firſt was to this Purpoſe;

SIR,

YOUR Generoſity has prevail'd, and I can no longer withſtand your Offers, (on the Condition as you promiſe in your laſt, that you will break off the Match between your Son, and my Lady.) You muſt provide your ſelf of a Peaſant's Habit, and to-morrow I will ſend you a Note to inſtruct you farther.

Yours, &c. TERESA.

The

The Second was as follows.

BE at the Weſt End of the Garden at one in the Morning, and aſcend a Ladder of Rope you will find there, and bring it over with you; near the Corner you'll perceive an Arbour, go in there, and wait till I come to conduct you to your Wiſhes. I'll take care nothing ſhall be in your way to interrupt your Privacy; and be ſure you be careful of your Tongue, for if you ſpeak, we ſhall be both undone.

My Thoughts were in the utmoſt Confuſion about the unravelling of this fatal Affair; and running over in my Imagination my paſt Converſations with my Father, I remember'd in our laſt, he told me, he thought it a little of the ſooneſt for me to marry; and that it would be more for my Intereſt, to delay our Nuptials; and perhaps, ſaid he, I may give you ſufficient Reaſons for the contrary. Whatever his Reaſons were, I little thought of the true one.

I ſent a Letter to the Maid of my falſe Miſtreſs; but ſhe fearing ſhe ſhould be found out (as ſhe really was) abſconded.

Don Lewis ſent to condole with me in my great Loſs; but I could perceive it gave him ſome Satisfaction, that I was in actual Poſſeſſion of that Eſtate, which I had only Hopes of in the Life of my Father. His Viſit was but ſhort, yet I thought it too long; for as I had no Deſign of marrying the Daughter, I was very willing to drop my Acquaintance with the Father. Tho' I gave him Hopes, when Decency would permit, I would not fail in my Addreſſes to his Daughter.

After the Interment of my Father, I began to examine his Affairs, and was not very well pleas'd to find the beſt Part of his Eſtate mortgag'd for twelve Years to ſeveral Perſons; and inſtead of ſeeing my ſelf worth

twenty thouſand Crowns a Year, ſoon found I was not worth the ſixth Part.

It was agreed, that my Father was very profuſe in his way of Living, always keeping open Houſe; yet it was every Body's Opinion he did not expend half his Income.

I ſometimes imagin'd there was ſome underhand Dealing in the Affair, but it was paſt my finding out: I therefore took an odd Reſolution, I determin'd with my ſelf to undergo a voluntary Baniſhment, till the term of Years on the Mortgage was expir'd.

I made a Viſit to *Don Lewis*, and told him of my Reſolves, and my Reaſons for it, which he could not chuſe but applaud; for it was eaſy enough to perceive Intereſt was the Jack he aim'd at. He did not preſs me to ſee his Daughter, nor I him; but after Aſſurance of remembrancing on both ſides, we parted.

I muſt own, my Soul long'd for another Taſte of the delicious Banquet; and I hope you will excuſe me when I own to you, my Paſſion could not be call'd Love; but as I found it impracticable, I made my ſelf as eaſy as I could.

In a few Weeks I had finiſh'd my Affairs, and waited for the ſailing of the *Weſt-India* Fleet; reſolving for the City of *Mexico*, where I had an Uncle very rich, who had often expreſs'd in his Letters to my Father, the great Deſire he had to ſee me.

I had rais'd out of the Ruins of my Father's Fortune ſix thouſand Crowns, without ſo much as touching any of his Plate, or Furniture; the care of thoſe Things, with all my Writings, I truſted to a near Kinſman, Superior of a Monaſtery in the City.

One Day, going about two Leagues out of Town, my Horſe's Girt broke, which obliged me to alight at a Sadler's to have it made good. The Man ask'd me if I would not take a walk in his Garden while he was doing his Work, which I accordingly did. At

At the end of the Walk was a pretty Arbour, and in it ſat a Woman reading; who at the Sight of me, gave a great Shriek, and was for running out; but I ſtopp'd her, and begging Pardon for diſturbing her, told her I would retire, and leave her alone. But upon finding it was *Tereſa*, Maid to my quondam Miſtreſs, I reſolv'd to ſtay with her, that I might know ſomething of my Father's Affair.

She appear'd confounded at the Sight of me, as imagining I had come on purpoſe to apprehend her; but I ſoon undeceiv'd her, and with a little ſoothing Language, and a couple of Piſtoles, ſhe diſpos'd herſelf to give me all the Information ſhe could.

Sir, (ſaid ſhe) I hope you will pardon me; for what I did, was purely by the Influence of Gold.

Your Father declar'd to me, at firſt Sight of my Miſtreſs his Heart and Reaſon forſook him; and often inform'd me, if he could not enjoy her, he ſhould be obliged to put an end to his Miſery by Death. I often lay'd before him the Injury he would do to you his Son, but he as often declar'd he would break off the Match between you; for he was well aſſur'd you had no very violent Inclination for her, and there were other Women in *Sevil*, of as great a Fortune as my Miſtreſs, that would be proud of his Alliance.

The many rich Preſents he made me, overcame my Honeſty; and that unfortunate Night that brought him his Death, was to have compleated his Happineſs. But, ſaid ſhe, (after ſome Pauſe) I am very much at a loſs to find out one thing. What's that, Madam? ſaid I. Why, Sir, return'd *Madona*, ſince I know how Matters ſtand between you and my Miſtreſs, I ſhall give you to underſtand, that you were not the favour'd Lover; and that another Gentleman revell'd in thoſe Delights, you perhaps ought to have the whole Poſſeſſion of; and that was the Reaſon I was ſo willing to comply with

your Father, for I had intended to introduce him in the Habit of the ſaid Gentleman, unknown to my Miſtreſs, and had provided a Story accordingly. For aſſoon as ever the Gentleman was gone, your Father ſhould have taken his Place in the ſame Diſguiſe; and I intended to impoſe on my Miſtreſs, that her Lover was return'd to take another Farewel of her. And this Cheat was eaſy to be carry'd on, being they were obliged to Silence, old *Don Lewis* lodging in the next Room. But what amazes me, (as I was ſaying) opening the Door to let my Miſtreſs's Lover in, another in the ſame Diſguiſe ruſh'd in upon me, which I am ſure was not your Father. I ſoon clear'd up this Affair with her, and let her know how I had ſupplanted my Rival.

She ſeem'd very much ſurpriz'd at the unravelling of this Secret, but was very glad ſhe had nothing to apprehend from my Reſentments; being that was the chief Cauſe of leaving her Miſtreſs, as imagining I ſhould find the Letters ſhe had ſent him. And upon this ſhe reſolv'd to go to her Miſtreſs again, for ſhe heard every Day from the Family, and knew how Matters ſtood; and that her Miſtreſs wanted her, that they might condole together for the loſs of *Don Juan*, her old Spark. But ſhe declar'd, ſhe was not very ſorry for his Loſs, for Money came very hard from him: and you know, Sir, ſaid ſhe, it is our Buſineſs to make Hay while the Sun ſhines.

Madam, ſaid I, ſince I know what you love beſt, if you'll purſue my Intrigue, twenty Piſtoles are at your Service. Indeed, Sir, return'd Madam, it muſt be ſomething very extraordinary that I ſhall refuſe for ſuch a Sum. Why then I'll let you into my Plot, ſaid I; you ſhall inform your Miſtreſs *Don Juan* is not Dead, as was reported; but after a tedious and dangerous Illneſs, was recover'd to a Miracle, but conceal'd

his Revival, being under ſome Apprehenſion of anſwering for the Life of my Father.

Sir, ſaid ſhe, I like your Plot ſo well that I'll anſwer for the Succeſs on't, and I'll go about it inſtantly, for I long to be fingering the Gold. Why then, ſaid I, you ſhall finger it before hand, and when the Buſineſs is done, I'll double the Sum. She was mightily pleas'd with the Amendment to the Bargain; and the third Night after was concluded on for the Time, when I was to attend as before.

I took leave of *Tereſa*, and purſu'd my Journey, made merry with my Friends, and return'd.

At length the happy Moment came, that I ſo long expected. My Mercenary Confident was ready; I enter'd, and once more took Poſſeſſion of all my Treaſure; and as I thought it would be the laſt time, was profuſe enough. My Lady ſeem'd very well pleas'd with my Night's Work, and in plain Terms told me ſo.

I had prepar'd a Letter, in which I had diſclos'd every thing. When our loving Affair was over, ſhe ask'd me ſoftly how I was engaged in that Adventure. I told her as ſoftly as I could, that I knew ſhe would be inquiſitive, and talking being dangerous, I had brought the Account in Writing, which I put into her Hand, and with ſome regret took my Leave; for the next Day was intended for our Imbarkation. As I walk'd over the Garden, I ask'd *Tereſa*, how long the Amour had been between *Don Juan* and her Lady; ſhe told me about two Years, and this was the Commencement.

Don Juan, whoſe Country-houſe lay about two Leagues from my Maſter's, was ſet upon by Thieves, and dangerouſly wounded; and there had loſt his Life, if *Don Lewis* had not very fortunately for him come that Way attended, and drove off the Thieves. *Don Juan* was ſo very much hurt, that it was not thought ſafe to carry him home; therefore my Maſter

order'd him to his Houſe, where his Wounds kept him a great while. When he had recover'd Strength enough to walk, he uſually employ'd his Time in the Garden, where my Lady often ſeeing him, fell deſperately in Love with him. She made me the Confident of her infant Paſſion, and I being a very proper Perſon to be truſted with ſuch Secrets, advis'd her to let the *Don* ſee her, which we contriv'd thus.

She was to go into an Arbour at the farther end of the Garden, (where I had obſerv'd *Don Juan* ſat every Day) and pretend to be aſleep. She took all the Care that was neceſſary in her Dreſs, and did as I directed her. It ſucceeded to her Wiſh; for the *Don*, at Sight of her, imagining her an earthly Goddeſs, kneel'd and kiſs'd her Hand. She ſeem'd to wake in a pretended Fright, but it was not long before they came to a right Underſtanding.

That Place was made the Rendezvous of the Lovers, when Opportunity would permit; but he recovering (tho' he pretended a Weakneſs for ſome time) was obliged to take leave of our Houſe; tho' in the Father's Abſence, they often found Opportunity to ſatisfy their Loves; and when they reſided in Town, he contin'd his Viſits in the Diſguiſe of the Countryman he us'd to ſend to my Lady with Preſents of Fruit, and by that means they received Letters from each other.

When ſhe had finiſh'd her ſhort Relation, I gave her the twenty Piſtoles I promis'd her, and took my Leave. She ſeem'd to be in ſome Confuſion about managing it with her Miſtreſs, for ſhe would certainly find her out, ſhe ſaid, when ſhe would be confirm'd of *Don Juan*'s Death; but ſhe comforted herſelf with telling me, her Miſtreſs durſt not diſcloſe it to any Body, for fear of betraying her ſelf. But poor *Tereſa* little thought her Miſtreſs would find it out ſo ſoon as the next Morning, when ſhe had read my Letter, that

I

I put into her Hand, when I left her. The next Day, I order'd my Equipage on board our Ship, which lay at *Cadiz*, and follow'd my ſelf; but the Wind chopping about, hinder'd our ſetting Sail. I then repented the leaving my Letter with my Miſtreſs, for by the Help of my Money with *Tereſa*, I might have made another Meal with her.

I did not think it Prudence to go on Shore, fearing her Reſentments might form ſome Deſigns on my Life. I therefore contented my ſelf on Board, till the Wind ſhould prove fair for Sailing. As I was reading in my Cabin one Day alone, my Servant brought me a Letter: The Contents were theſe:

Noble Sir,

UNderſtanding you are bound for Mexico, *the Place of my Birth, I ſhall think it the greateſt Honour in the World, if you pleaſe to take me into your Protection. My Father was a rich Merchant of that City, who going to another World, has left me a conſiderable Eſtate in this. Thoſe Perſons who had the Care of my Education here, ſeem to have Deſigns againſt my Fortune; therefore I have made my Eſcape from 'em, but muſt return to my Betrayers, if you have not the Goodneſs to be my Guardian to* Mexico, *where I ſhall return the Obligation you ſhall pleaſe to lay me under, in being my Protector.*

I ask'd my Man, Who brought the Letter, and he told me a young Negro. I bid him bring him in. I ask'd him ſeveral Queſtions, and found him ready with his Anſwers. He inform'd me, that his Father, tho' a Negro, was a Man of Subſtance, and had ſent him in his Infancy to be educated at *Sevil*, and for the reſt the Letter inform'd me.

I was mightily pleas'd with the Perſon of the black Gentleman, and treated him civilly, with the Aſſurance of delivering him ſafe to his Friends at *Mexico*.

When we were alone, he told me had a farther Secret to diſcover to me, if he was ſure of not being interrupted. Upon hearing this, I order'd my Servant on Shore for ſome Neceſſaries, and inform'd him, we need not fear any Interruption for ſome Hours.

After a long Pauſe, and caſting his Eyes on the Ground, he began.

This Veil of Night would not hide my Bluſhes, if I were not convinced in your Knowledge of my Frailty. But if you'll conſider my Youth, Climate, and Opportunity, you will allow few of my Sex could withſtand the Temptation. Be not ſurpris'd to find in this Diſguiſe the Daughter of *Don Lewis*, who is ſo far ſubject to the Caprice of Love, as to diſcloſe to you the inmoſt Secret of her Heart.

The Letter you left with me produc'd a contrary Effect than I believe you imagin'd; and inſtead of Rage and Indignation taking Poſſeſſion of my Breaſt, a ſofter Paſſion ſtole in, and I felt all the Tenderneſs imaginable for *Don Pedro*.

I expect nothing but ill Uſage from you for my paſt Conduct; but if you can believe there is any Sincerity in Woman, after what I have been guilty of, I am aſſur'd you may depend on what I ſay, that no other Object ſhall ſhare my Heart with you. I do not mean the Tye of Wedlock, but if you will accept of me as I am, I'll be as ſubſervient to your Commands, as your meaneſt Slave.

I was ſo confounded between Pleaſure and Amazement, that I imagin'd all I heard and ſaw was a Dream; but being ſweetly convinc'd of the Reality, I ſaid all my Paſſion could ſuggeſt in Return, not giving myſelf time to conſider of the Oddneſs of the Accident: 'Twas ſufficient I had in Poſſeſſion all that was lovely in Woman, in my Imagination; and I had no other Thought, but how to keep her from the Knowledge of her Fa-

ther

ther on Shore, and the Sailors on Board, for we did not know when we ſhould ſet Sail.

My Miſtreſs told me, if ſhe had not ſucceeded with me, ſhe reſolv'd for a Nunnery, but ſince we were reconcil'd, ſhe had laid by all Thoughts of the Habit. She made her Eſcape from her Father's without the Aſſiſtance or Knowledge of any one but *Tereſa*. But what favour'd her Eſcape was, the Abſence of her Father for ten Days in the Country; yet ſhe fear'd, when he came Home again, he would fright *Tereſa* into Confeſſion, or by Promiſes get it out of her; for that ſhe was mercenary enough to ſell any thing ſhe had to the beſt Bidder. To prevent which, we agreed to dreſs her in the Habit of a Man, and let her wear her own Complexion.

Accordingly we both went on Shore at *Cadiz*, and ſoon equipt our ſelves with what we wanted, and on Board I brought my Spark, as a Relation of mine, that had a Mind to run his Fortune with me. The next Day the Wind proving favourable, we ſet Sail and left our Apprehenſions behind us.

I was oblig'd to let our Servant into the Secret, that I might have it kept ſo; well knowing if he had diſcover'd it himſelf, it had not been a Secret long, though the Fellow was very faithful to any Secret that was truſted to him.

We touch'd at the *Madera* Iſlands, paſs'd the Pike of *Teneriff*, got over the Line, duck'd our Men as uſual, and met with no extraordinary Accident; but in fifty three Days arriv'd ſafe at the City of *Sancta Domingo*, (or St. *Dominick*) the Capital City of the Iſland *Hiſpaniola*.

I was very well pleas'd to find ſo delightful a Place as this was, after the Fatigue of our Voyage. My Miſtreſs and I took us a Lodging at a good natur'd *Spaniard*'s, that treated us very well —— for our Money.

Here my Lady told me, ſhe felt the Effects of our Familiarity. I endeavour'd to perſuade her I had no Hand in't; but ſhe inſiſted upon't that the Deed was done by me, and gave me ſome Proofs to believe it.

I was very much concern'd to find Means to hide it from the Houſe; for ſhe began to have thoſe Qualms which attend that natural Diſtemper; and by the Beauty of her Face, I fear'd her Sex might ſoon be diſtinguiſh'd.

I kept her from the Sight of our Ship's Crew in the Voyage, ſhe always ſtaying in the Cabin; and it was very dangerous to diſcover a fine Woman in this Part of the World, becauſe there are few that are handſome.

I was upon Thorns till our Departure for *Mexico*; but the Fleet ſtaying longer than I expected, I took a Ramble to the moſt noted Places in the Iſland; and ſince I underſtand by your Story you never were there, I'll give you a ſhort Deſcription of it.

Hiſpaniola is ſeated from ſeventeen Degrees, to nineteen Degrees Latitude, in Length about one hundred and twenty Leagues, and Breadth (about the middle Part) fifty. The Air much the ſame for Heat, as at *Sevil* in *Spain*; the Fruits delicious, and ſome peculiar to the Place.

The capital City, is St. *Domingo*, which gives a delightful Proſpect from the Fields about it, being mix'd with pleaſant Gardens and Rivers.

Here the Governor of the Iſland reſides, and here are kept all their Offices, and Courts of Judicature, and it is likewiſe the Store-houſe to the whole Iſland.

There are two Cities more, St. *Jago* and *Nueſtra Sennora de alta Gracia*; the laſt of which is to the South, and is famous for the beſt Chocolate in the World.

The Cathedral of St. *Domingo* is a handſom Pile of Building, and the other Churches are anſwerable to the Grand-

Grandeur of the Inhabitants, whoſe very Artizans are wealthy.

The Friars live as luxurious here, as in any other Part of the World, and follow the Steps of their Brethren, in chuſing the nobleſt Situations.

This Iſland was diſcover'd by *Columbus* in the Year 1492, and kept in the Hands of the *Spaniards* ever ſince that Time; while moſt of their other Acquiſitions are fell to the *Engliſh*, *French*, and *Dutch*.

Tho' the *French* have ſome Plantations in the Iſland at preſent, yet they were of their own acquiring, and not taken from the *Spaniards*; and being chiefly Hunters, and not very rich, the *Spaniards* make no Attempt upon 'em.

No Iſland can boaſt of more convenient Ports than this, and every Port diſembogues fine Rivers (ſtor'd with palatable Fiſh) into the Sea; but then to qualify that Bleſſing, they are very much infeſted with Alligators and Crocodiles. I ſaw one lying on the Shore-ſide like a Log of Wood, and as a Buffalo came there to drink, he ſprung upon him, dragg'd him to the Bottom, and there devour'd him; tho' they are eaſily to be avoided, from the aromatic Smell that comes from their Skin.

I was much ſurpris'd to find in moſt Houſes, Serpents inſtead of Cats, that were greater Enemies to Rats and Mice; but what was more pleaſing, they were not the leaſt Offenſive, having no Venom in 'em. But then, they will often play the Fox with the Poultry, and deſtroy many of them, unleſs narrowly watch'd.

The *Scolopendria* of the *Greeks* is found here, and very large Scorpions; but by the Divine Providence, neither of 'em hurtful.

I ſhall not trouble you with any farther Account of this Iſland, becauſe there is not any thing to be found there, but what is upon the Continent, unleſs ſome particular Herbs; and as I am no Botaniſt, I ſhall not take any Notice of 'em.

The

The Time came at laſt for our embarking for *Vera Cruz*, in order to go to *Mexico*, and I left St. *Domingo* with ſome Regret; as imagining I ſhould not meet with any other Place in *America* ſo pleaſant.

During our Voyage, my Miſtreſs was mightily diſorder'd.

We embark'd for *Vera Cruz*, where we arriv'd without any Accident; and having no Buſineſs there, we ſet out by Land for *Mexico*, and got ſafe there. But inquiring for my Uncle, I was inform'd he was gone to reſide at *Lima*, the capital City of *Peru*. My Concern was the more, in that I fear'd I ſhould not meet with proper Accommodation at *Mexico*, for want of him, in the Affair of my Miſtreſs; for her Condition would not bear the Fatigue of another Removal,

I was entertain'd in the Houſe of a near Friend of my Uncle's, and one who kept a Correſpondence with him; he was very civil to me, and of a finer Diſpoſition than generally the *Spaniards* are; but he had the ſame Vanity as all the old Chriſtians have, who pride themſelves very much upon't. I let him into the Secret of my Lady, and her Condition; and by the Help of his Wife, we made her reaſſume her proper Dreſs. But we kept her private.

The Time of her Delivery came, and the Product prov'd a luſty Boy, who ſtaid among us three Weeks, and then left us. I had no Scruples about being the Father, for it was plain enough to be ſeen; it being my Picture in a little. My Miſtreſs continu'd very weak longer than the uſual Time; and I being alone with her one Day, ſhe told me ſhe was under ſome Apprehenſions concerning our Landlord, *Don Manuel*, who had made her ſecretly many large Offers, and the Nurſe was his Emiſſary. I told her I had the ſame Propoſals from his Wife; and tho' the Woman was not diſagreeable, nay might paſs for a Beauty, where Wo-

men

men were ſo ſcarce, yet I could not find any Tenderneſs for her in my Heart.

After many Arguments between us, a Thought came into my Head, which I hop'd would produce ſome Mirth among us. I deſir'd my Miſtreſs to give *Don Manuel* ſome ſmall Encouragement, and leave the reſt to me.

My Landlord ſoon found an Opportunity, through my Means, to ſee my Miſtreſs. She follow'd my Advice, and tranſported the *Don* out of his Senſes; his Joy was not to be contain'd, he forgot the Gravity of a *Spaniard*, and caper'd about like a *French* Dancing maſter. When I learnt all their Diſcourſe from my Miſtreſs, I begg'd her to continue her good Humour to him, and promiſe him a Meeting that Day Sevennight in the Summer houſe of the Garden. She did as I directed.

In the mean time, I took my Opportunity to confabulate with the Wife, and gave her Directions, the Night appointed, to go to the ſame Summer-houſe, but to avoid Speech, being it was over the Water, and Men were continually paſſing to and fro. The good Woman was as much overjoy'd as her Husband; and the better to carry on my Deſign, I gave it out that I was to go with ſome Gentlemen a hunting the Buffalo for two or three Days. I deſir'd my Landlord (a Title I had given him out of Mirth) to take care of my Wife in my Abſence. I told my good Landlady, this was a Contrivance of mine, that we might not be ſuſpected.

My Miſtreſs had made juſt the ſame Agreement with the *Don*. The Time came, and the good Man and Woman were left to worry one another with their extraordinary Paſſion.

The next Day at Dinner, (for we generally eat together) *Don Manuel* caſt many a Sheep's-Eye at my Wife, and his good Lady at me.

The

The ſame Day, as I was reading in the Garden, *Madona* came to me, and in bitter Terms of Reproach gave me much ill Language; and told me I had betray'd her to her Husband baſely, by giving him the Ring ſhe gave me the laſt Night. I ſoon found that ſhe had made a Preſent to her Husband of a Ring, taking him for me, and ſhe had obſerv'd it upon his Finger. She made ſo many Speeches about it, that at laſt I was compell'd to tell her the whole Truth, to get rid of her tireſome Paſſion, but I ſoon repented of my Declaration; for ſhe flew upon me, and with her Nails play'd the Cat with my Face, and I had much ado to diſengage my ſelf from her. So furious does diſappointed Paſſion make a Woman.

Her confounded Temper made me reſolve to leave *Mexico*. The Husband began to ſuſpect ſomething of the Affair; but his Imagination, that he had the Company of my Wife in the Summer-houſe, curb'd his Reſentment.

The Woman's Rage was unſurmountable, and it was not in my Power to bring her to Temper: Therefore I choſe to avoid her as much as poſſible. As I was at Supper with my Miſtreſs, ſome few Days after the Accident happen'd, ſhe told me, ſhe had receiv'd a Preſent of Cordial-water from Don *Manuel*'s Wife. Now I had not told her of *Madona*'s Reſentment, becauſe I imagin'd it might make her uneaſy: But aſſoon as I heard of the Preſent, ſomething ſtruck my Mind, that was ſomething uncommon in it; I therefore deſir'd my Miſtreſs not to drink any of it. Lord, ſaid ſhe, my Dear, I have already, and deſire you would taſte it too, for 'tis the pleaſanteſt Liquor I ever drank in my Life.

I was mightily diſturb'd at it, and two Hours diſcover'd the fatal Effects.

My Miſtreſs began to be very much out of order; and notwithſtanding all the Aid of Phyſicians, ſhe expir'

in my Arms, and every body agreed ſhe had been poiſon'd. I had, in my Fury and Ravings, declar'd to Don *Manuel* the Author of this black Deed; and when he went to enquire after her, was inform'd ſhe went out before Night, and was ſuppos'd to have gone to the Town of St. *Jago*, on the Lake, to one of her Relations. Don *Manuel* ſent after her, but ſhe was not to be found. He grieved at the loſs of my Miſtreſs, as much as I did; and I dare avow, if he had found his Wife, he would have ſacrific'd her to the *Manes* of my dear Miſtreſs.

I was very much griev'd for the Loſs of my Miſtreſs, for I had reaſon to be convinc'd her Paſſion for me was unfeign'd. You may eaſily imagine, there was no ſtaying for me in the Houſe where this diſmal Accident happen'd; but as I was preparing to be gone, the *Corrigidore* ſent for me to appear before him, to give him the beſt Account I could of this Action. I related to him the whole Truth, as I have told it you; only I declar'd it was my Wife I had loſt. Don *Manuel* was ſeiz'd, and put in Priſon, notwithſtanding I inſiſted upon his Innocency; but he proceeded in that manner, being it was ſuppos'd he was acceſſary to his Wife's Eſcape. But a few Days after he was ſecur'd, News was brought, that his Wife was found murder'd in the Woods, as it was ſuppos'd by ſome *Indians*, as ſhe was endeavouring to make her Eſcape from the Hands of Juſtice.

Thus ſhe met her Reward for her barbarous Murder of a Woman that never wrong'd her, tho' indeed the Favour was deſign'd for me.

A few Days after this fatal Accident, I heard of ſome Merchants that deſign'd to croſs the Continent to the *South Sea* with a good Guard. I made Acquaintance with 'em, paid my Quota to the Charge, and ſet out along with 'em, leaving behind me the hateful City

City of *Mexico*, where I had loſt the only thing I eſteem'd on Earth. And I muſt own to you, notwithſtanding my Philoſophy, I never thought of her for ſome time without the utmoſt Heart-breaking. I have endeavour'd indeed, by forcing my Temper to Mirth, to bury the Remembrance; and Time, with good Company, has brought me ſome Aſſiſtance; yet nevertheleſs, I do firmly believe, no Woman's Charms will ever for the future break my Reſt; for I am ſatisfy'd, my late Miſtreſs made a Hole quite through my Heart.

But to purſue my Diſcourſe.

We ſet out, with a Guard of fifty *Spaniſh* Soldiers, for fear of the *Indians*, who had made it their daily Practice to ſet upon every body that went through the Country, if not too ſtrong for 'em. I need not tell you, that *Mexico* is one of the fineſt Cities in the World, or that it lies upon a Lake, and no other Paſſage to it but over three broad Cauſways from different Cities on the Land. But what is ſomething extraordinary, one part of the Lake is brackiſh, and noiſome, with no living Creature in't; and the other is freſh, wholſome, and ſtor'd with palatable Fiſh. But as there are many exact Accounts of the Continent of *America*, and its Conqueſt by my noble Countryman *Hernando Cortes*, I ſhall ſay no more of it; but I will take the Liberty to add that *Cæſar* and *Alexander* were but Pigmy Conquerors to him; and every body will be of that Opinion, if they will give themſelves the Trouble of reading his Hiſtory.

We met with no *Indians* to oppoſe our Paſſage, and arriv'd at *Segovia*, an inland Town inviron'd with Rocks, and but meanly built. Some of our Company ſtaid there, and I was willing to ſtay along with 'em to refreſh my ſelf; for it's but indifferent travelling over rocky Mountains, and croſſing Rivers upon Hurdles, that is, Pieces of Timber laſh'd together with Ropes; and is ſometimes dangerous, tho' we got over ſafe with our whole Company.

I

I ſtaid fifteen Days at *Segovia*, with fifteen of my Companions. I was very much ſurpriz'd at the Relation of ſome of the Inhabitants of that Place, who told me, about two hundred of your Countrymen the Year before (Free-booters) in ſpight of all Oppoſition came from the *South Sea*, to the *North*, with a very great Booty, defeated the *Spaniards* when ten to one, and poſted to all the Advantage in the World, ſeveral times. The People of *Segovia* talk of 'em as ſo many Devils; and that they were aided by the black Gentleman, or it had been an Impoſſibility to have gone through what they did. But it muſt be confeſs'd, your Countrymen deſpiſe Hazards, and laugh at the greateſt Dangers.

After we had ſufficiently refreſh'd our ſelves, we took our Leaves of *Segovia*, and purſu'd our Journey to the *South-Sea*, with a Guard of *Indians*, ſubſervient to the *Spaniards*. And I muſt own to you, there is not a People in the World more true to their Truſt, than thoſe confederate *Indians* that own the Dominion of *Spain*.

Our Journey to St. *Fee* was pleaſant enough, through a rich, level, pleaſant Country, and we rode upon Mules, a Beaſt of a ſure Foot; and our chief Diverſion was ſhooting of Monkies, that play'd us ſeveral comical Tricks, running up the Trees, and frequently did us the Favour to urine in our Faces, and ſometimes ſomething worſe.

When we arriv'd at St. *Fee*, a ſmall Town and Port in the *South Sea*, we had the good Fortune of meeting with a Veſſel ready to ſet Sail for *Lima*. We went immediately on Board, and got clear of the Shore that Evening.

We arriv'd at *Lima* after a Voyage of twenty five Days; we landed at *Calao*, the Port that all the Ships of *Spain* anchor at, and one of the fineſt in the *South-Sea*.

The

The Town is built upon a Point of Land that runs into the Sea. It is very ſtrongly fortify'd, and well garriſon'd. I ſent my Servant to my Uncle at *Lima*, to acquaint him that I was coming to wait on him the next Day; but my Servant return'd in four Hours, with my Uncle's Coach, who inform'd me, that he was impatient till he ſaw me. My Uncle was Judge of the Civil Courts, and a Man in very great Power. He ſent his *Major Domo* to wait on me, with his Excuſe, that he had come himſelf, but that he was afflicted with the Gout. I only ſtaid till I had put on other Cloaths, and immediately after went in the Coach with the *Major Domo*, and arriv'd at my Uncle's juſt within Night. He was very well pleas'd to ſee me, and careſs'd me in an extraordinary manner. But I was ſomething ſurpriſed to find that he had reſolv'd for *Spain* within a Month, there to end his Days.

I told him the Story of my Father's unhappy Fate, only concealing his Love to *Donna Elvira*. He was very much ſhock'd at the News, owning to me his chief Reaſon of going to *Spain*, was to have the Happineſs of living together. I then told him, I ſuppos'd as that could not be, that he would alter his Reſolution, and think no more of his Voyage: But he anſwer'd, moſt of his Effects were gone for *Spain*, two Months before, and that he muſt of neceſſity follow.

I gave him to underſtand, that it was not in my Power to wait upon him. He took a great deal of Pains to perſuade me to it, but when he found it was to no purpoſe, he told me ſince I was not to be prevail'd upon, he would leave me Maſter of a ſmall Fortune in *Lima*.

During his Stay, he introduc'd me to moſt of the beſt Families in the City, and the Viceroy was pleas'd to ſhow me good Countenance, and promis'd my Uncle to provide for me.

When

When the time came of his embarking for *Spain*, I waited on him on Board, where we took Leave, though not with dry Eyes; and I have repented many times that I did not accompany him. But we muſt ſubmit to Fate; and what is allotted us by Fortune will come.

He left me Maſter of a well-furniſh'd Houſe, and a Plantation whoſe Income would provide every thing Neceſſity requir'd in the middle Station of Life, with a Promiſe that at his Death I ſhould inherit the Remainder of his Eſtate; for he was a ſingle Man, and had no nearer Relation than my ſelf.

I took all the Pleaſure the Place would afford; and to ſay Truth there was no want of any thing at *Lima*, except the Converſation of the Female Sex; though I muſt freely confeſs I did not always want that.

The Viceroy prov'd very kind to me, but Death taking him away ſuddenly, I mightily griev'd his Loſs, as indeed I had Reaſon; for the Perſon that ſucceeded him prov'd the Reverſe. He made a general Remove of all the Officers the Deceas'd had put in Poſts, and among the reſt I was one of the Sufferers; and farther, upon all Occaſions he made it his Buſineſs to ſlight me; and often affronted me ſo groſly, that nothing but his Dignity ſhrouded him from my Reſentment: and many other People in Power, (as the Injudicious generally copy the Frailties of their Superiors, and neglect their Virtues) treated me in the ſame Manner; but I was reſolv'd not to bear it.

One Day as I was coming from my Plantation upon my Mule, attended only with my old Servant, I met a Nephew of the Viceroy's in his Chaiſe, in a narrow Road, and not being willing to give way to him, we were both at a Stand; which ſo enrag'd the cholerick Gentleman, that he flew out of his Vehicle, and ran his Spado into the Belly of my Mule, which dropt down dead.

I did

I did not want ſo much Provocation to raiſe my Choler, therefore I drew upon him, and left him in the ſame Condition with my Beaſt, grov'ling upon the Sand. He had ſeveral People that attended him, who ruſh'd upon me and my Man, overpower'd us, and dragg'd us immediately to the Viceroy's Palace; who, being glad of any Pretence to wreak his Ill-nature upon me, condemn'd me to *Baldivia* for Life, in ſpite of the Interceſſion of thoſe few Friends I had.

It was in vain to complain of this damn'd Trick of Fortune; and the more to plague me, he left Orders that I ſhould be diſpos'd of to *Don Sancho Ramirez*, a Relation of his; the Wretch that I have ſufficiently reveng'd my ſelf of, and, in part, of the inhumane Viceroy; for they were Partners in Trade.

Ramirez us'd to put me upon the moſt ſlaviſh Buſineſs, but as I had Money I uſually bought it off; for I receiv'd yearly my ſmall Eſtate from *Lima*, I mean from my Plantation, for the Viceroy had ſeiz'd all the reſt of my Moveables; and would have done this, but that the honeſt *Indian* who had the occupying of it, inſiſted on its being my Uncle's.

This old Hunks had a beautiful Daughter, that I found was in Love with a Colonel of the Garriſon of *Baldivia*. This Colonel, notwithſtanding my Condition, was not aſham'd of my Acquaintance, and often told me the Torments he endur'd for the young Lady.

I ask'd him if the Lady knew of his Paſſion, he inform'd me that he flatter'd himſelf with the Return, though they had never ſpoke to each other, but he had receiv'd obliging Glances from her fair Eyes, from the Gallery which overlook'd the Court of Guard.

I agreed that if he would write a Letter, I'd pawn my Life ſhe ſhould have it, and an Anſwer into the Bargain; if ſhe had any Inclination to ſend one. He embrac'd me, and thank'd me for my kind Proffer, and wrote

wrote a paſſionate Letter to the Lady; which I accompanied with another, to let her know I was devoted to her Service upon the Colonel's Account.

In two Days I had an Anſwer convey'd into a hollow Tree in the Garden, as I had concerted in my Note to her, that waited upon the Colonel's.

Theſe Paper Meſſengers brought Matters to bear, and the kind Lady reſolv'd to venture her ſelf with the Colonel.

We contriv'd a Ladder of Ropes long enough to reach from her Window to the Terras on the Court of Guard; and I convey'd a ſmall Bundle of Packthread for her to throw down, which we faſten'd to the Ladder of Ropes, and the Lady with much Difficulty pull'd it up, and faſten'd to an Iron Cheſt which was in the Room: But as ſhe came trembling for Fear down the Ladder, it drew the Cheſt along the Floor above, which awaken'd that old Devil her Father. He immediately alarm'd all the Servants, as well as Slaves; but the Captain had got ſafe off with his Miſtreſs.

When old Huncks had ſummon'd us all together, he went into the Room to ſee what the Matter was; but when he found his Money ſafe, his Diſtraction began to abate. I muſt own, I wiſh'd heartily we could have clear'd his Money too, as well as his Daughter. It was ſome time ere he miſs'd her, as having no Notion of her Elopement; but when he found ſhe was gone, his Paſſion was unſurmountable; for the good Lady had made bold with Writings of an Eſtate, that it ſeems were left her by an old Aunt; and I was very well pleas'd ſhe did not go empty-handed to my Colonel; for I take Money to be the Sinews of Love as well as War.

The inrag'd *Don* ran up and down like a Madman, with about a dozen of us at his Heels; and as we approach'd the Ditch of the Caſtle, which happen'd to be free from Water, being the Tide was out, but pretty well

well provided with Mud, ſome of his Servants imagin'd they ſaw ſomething lie on the Mud. The old *Don* being very peery, was ſtooping down and gazing to be ſatisfy'd; and the Devil prompting me juſt at the ſame time, I clapt my Knee into his Bum, and down fell the poor *Don* into the Mud.

I was the firſt that cry'd out for Help, yet I did not make extraordinary Haſte to aſſiſt him; but at laſt Ropes were brought, and after he had ſlounder'd about a Quarter of an Hour, we lugg'd him up in a ſweet Pickle.

By good Luck, he did not miſtruſt that the Favour was deſign'd him, but purely accidental. I had an Opportunity the next Day to find out the Lady and the happy Colonel, who had brought a Commiſſion from the Prieſt to go to Bed together. He was ſo well pleas'd with my Service, that he promis'd to ranſom me from *Don Sancho*, and did not doubt but he ſhould ſucceed, being the *Don* made Money his *Summum Bonum*. But we were ſurpriz'd at the Refuſal, for he had ſuch a ſtrict Charge from the Viceroy of *Peru* to hold me faſt, that it was more his Intereſt to keep me than part with me. Nay this Propoſal open'd the old *Don*'s Eyes, for he ſaw plainly I was at Bottom of his Daughter's Affair. This ſo enrag'd him that he order'd a great wooden Clog to be lock'd faſt to my Leg, which I was oblig'd to lug along with me.

This Proceeding drove me almoſt to Deſpair, and I loſt all Hopes of ever procuring my Liberty.

The Colonel and his Lady (who had recover'd the Fortune from *Don Sancho*) were very much griev'd at my ill Uſage, and try'd all manner of Means for my Liberty, but to no purpoſe. I paſt three Years in this uncomfortable Life, and had the Pleaſure to hear that my implacable Enemy, the Viceroy of *Peru*, was ſummon'd to *Spain*, upon the Account of ſome Male-Adminiſtration.

nistration. At the hearing of this News my Hope of Freedom began to revive, but it was ſoon clouded again; for the old Devil, *Don Sancho*, was reſolv'd to keep me a Martyr to his own Revenge; and I weather'd out two Years more in my wretched Confinement: Though, Thanks to Heaven, nothing depreſs'd my Spirits quite.

The Colonel got an Opportunity to tell me that there was a Veſſel in the Road bound for *Lima:* and the Captain being a very good Friend of his, he had prevailed with him to take me on Board him, if it was poſſible for me to get out of Hunks's Clutches.

I made all the Efforts imaginable, but to no purpoſe; and I was once more in my Imagination given up to eternal Slavery.

The ſame Night, as I was endeavouring to compoſe my troubled Thoughts, I heard a great Noiſe in the Caſtle-Yard, and was very much ſurpriz'd a while after, when I ſaw an Officer and a File of Soldiers come to ſeize me, as a Plotter againſt the State, and carry'd me to the Colonel's Lodging. But my Surprize was turn'd into Joy, when I found he had us'd this Stratagem to gain me my Freedom. I told him he had trebly repaid the Obligation he was pleas'd to ſay he lay under to me, and I was reſolv'd not to accept of my Liberty till I found what Stir *Don Sancho* made about it: but the Colonel reſolv'd me that he had the Means in his own Hands to pacify him.

I went on Board, and ſet Sail the ſame Evening. We had but an indifferent Voyage, being involv'd in many Storms; yet at laſt we arriv'd ſafe at *Calao*.

I ſhall, if you think fit, give you a ſhort Deſcription of *Baldivia*, becauſe few Foreigners are permitted to enter their Port.

Baldivia, or *Valdivia*, takes its Name from the firſt Founder, a *Spaniard*. The old Town ſtood a little higher

higher than the new one, till it was deſtroy'd by the *Indians*. For *Peter Baldivia*, and the reſt of the *Spaniards*, were ſuch Tyrants over the poor Natives, that they took Heart, laid an Ambuſh for 'em, and deſtroy'd 'em every one. But in the new Town they are ſufficiently guarded from their Inſults, or Danger of a foreign Enemy; which have often attempted 'em to no Purpoſe. This being reckon'd the richeſt Country for Gold Mines in all *America*, Nature has befriended 'em very much in the Strength of the Place; for there is ſo large a Sand-Bank in the Mouth of the Bay, that Veſſels are obliged to come within five hundred Yards of the Shore (which is guarded by a ſtrong Caſtle) to avoid it. It is a difficult Harbour to enter, but when you are once at Anchor, no Wind on the whole Compaſs can hurt you, tho' it blew a Storm; it is ſo well ſhelter'd by the Land on all Sides of it.

The Inhabitants are chiefly made up of baniſh'd Perſons, who generally work in the Mines for ſo many Years; and the Time expir'd, they have ſo much Land of their own to cultivate; and moſt of them find the Means to be rich; but how honeſtly I'll give you leave to judge. The Country about it is very fruitful, and produces great Quantities of Apple Trees, from which they make very good Cyder. But the Juice of the Grape is very uncomatable there, and thoſe that do procure it muſt pay extravagantly for it.

This City, for it's no leſs, is eſteem'd the Key to the *South Sea*.

The Governor and Officers are generally ſent from *Lima*, but the Soldiers are compos'd of thoſe Perſons that are ſent there for a Puniſhment. And tho' few Perſons chuſe to be ſent there, yet as few deſire to leave it when once they are ſettled.

Notwithſtanding the People could make ſhift to live without Religion, yet there are ſeven Churches and three

three Monaſteries; but they ſeem to be in a ruinated Condition: And I don't doubt but an Age or two hence, thoſe that paſs that Way may find them totally ruined.

As I ſaid, we arriv'd ſafe at the Port of *Calao*. I was reſolv'd to remain *incognito*, till I had enquir'd into the Affairs of the City.

I took an Occaſion to ſend to my *Indian* Tenant, who came to me, and was very well pleas'd to find me at Liberty.

I ſent him to ſeveral of my Friends, to acquaint them what Circumſtance I lay under, who ſoon inform'd the Viceroy of my Misfortune, and he as readily comply'd with my Deſire, allowing me the Liberty I had enjoy'd before I was ſent to *Baldivia*.

I once more made my Appearance at *Lima*, renew'd my Acquaintance, and began to divert my ſelf as before. By degrees I crept into the good Graces of the Viceroy, who gave me a Poſt in the Government, that brought me a conſiderable Income, and with the Eſteem of moſt People I paſt on a whole Year.

The Viceroy not liking his Situation, found the Means to be recall'd to *Spain*: Yet recommending me to his Succeſſor, I remain'd in the ſame Station he before had given me; though I cannot brag of any more Favours beſtow'd on me by my new Superior; for he was a Man of an uncertain Temper, proud, and revengeful. He was newly marry'd to a very rich Widow of *Lima*, who had a very beautiful Daughter, by Report; for ſhe was not ſuffer'd to take the Liberties of the Place.

I often had a great Deſire to ſee her Face, for I had obſerv'd her veil'd many times at Church, which was all the Liberty ſhe had. I was inform'd ſhe was deſign'd a Wife for the *Supreme Judge*, though much againſt her Inclination, being there was a Diſparity of Years, which is certainly the greateſt Bitter to the Sweets of Matrimony; but nothing is conſulted now more than Wealth.

I receiv'd a Letter from my Uncle at *Sevil*, wherein he desir'd I would leave *Lima*, and come to *Spain*: And, to induce me to it, he gave me the Promise to make me his Heir. I must own I began to be pretty well tir'd of this Climate; and the Time drawing on for the Expiration of my Mortgage, I set my self to prepare things accordingly.

I dispos'd of my Plantation to my faithful *Indian*, for an under Price, being I thought I was under many Obligations to him. I resign'd up my Office in the Viceroy's Palace, indeed, because I could not get Leave to dispose of it.

I turn'd all my Effects into Gold-Dust, and sent it before me to my Uncle; and now I only waited for Company to go over Land to *Vera Cruz*, a Port in the North Sea, where I should have Convenience of imbarking for *Spain*.

I began now to think of settling in the World; and indeed it was almost time, for I had past my twenty-eighth Year, and at that Age the Heat of Youth should be pretty well over; for if a Man cannot see his Follies on this side thirty, he is in Danger of being incorrigible all the Days of his Life. Beside, I had very good Encouragement to Stability, my own Fortune, and the Prospect of my Uncle's; who in all Probability had not many Years to live, being in his eighty-third Year.

Well then, as my Story is almost off the Stage, I'll throw you into the Bargain a short Account of one Place more, for my Catastrophe, and then to my Epilogue for detaining you so long, and that shall be the Description of *Lima*, as it is at present.

Lima, the Capital City of *Peru*, is seated about two Leagues from the Sea Port of *Calao*, in 12 Degrees 6 Minutes of Southern Latitude, and 79 Degrees 45 Minutes of Western Longitude. It is built in a noble Plain, with Hills at a Distance.

Francis

Francis Pizarro was the Founder, in the Year 1535, tho' it has chang'd its Name ſince his Time from *La Ciudad de los Reges*, or *City of Kings*, to *Lima*, which is only a Corruption of the *Indian* Word *Rimac*, which was the Name of an *Indian* Idol, formerly worſhip'd in that Place.

This is the fineſt City (next to *Mexico*) in all *America*. All the Streets are in a direct Line, exactly meaſur'd out, and much of the ſame Length and Breadth, being fifty Yards wide.

In the Heart of the City is the nobleſt Square my Eyes ever beheld, and in the midſt a Fountain of Braſs, adorn'd with eight Lions, continually ſpouting Water, ſupply'd by the River of *Lima*, that runs through the Skirts of the Town, cover'd with a handſome Stone Bridge that leads to the Suburbs. Within the Suburbs is a fine publick Walk, beautify'd with Orange Trees, and in the Evening is crowded with the beſt Company of the City. Although this City is ſo beautiful, it was moſtly deſtroy'd by an Earthquake in the Year 1682. There are no leſs than fifty-ſeven Churches and Chapels (with thoſe that are in the Monaſteries) in this City, and twenty-four Monaſteries for Men, and twelve for Women. The Cathedral is very magnificent, as are moſt of the other Churches, tho' chiefly built with Wood from the firſt Story, by reaſon of the Earthquakes.

The Viceroy of *Peru* has his Reſidence here, and is ſo powerful he hardly owns the King his Maſter to be his Superior. Here are likewiſe kept all the Courts of Juſtice, and from the High Court there is no Appeal. Among the reſt, they have ſettled an *Inquiſition*, which, in my Conſcience, is worſe than that of *Spain*. Heaven keep every Body from it; for in this Court the Informant is a Witneſs, and the Accuſer is ever behind the Curtain, and to mend the Matter, the Witneſſes are never brought Face to Face.

To compleat the Grandeur of the Place, there is an Archbiſhoprick, and an Univerſity of three well-fill'd Colleges; tho' the Students don't always follow Learning, for I have found ſome ignorant enough.

There are twelve Hoſpitals, and one of them for *Indians*.

This City is garriſon'd with two thouſand Horſe, and ſix thouſand Foot; but very indifferent Troops for Service againſt a foreign Foe, being chiefly compos'd of *Creolians* and *Indians*. Theſe *Creolians* (who are ſo nam'd from owing their Birth to *America*) are moſt of 'em proud, lazy, and ignorant, and generally Tyrants whenever they have Power, tho' ſharp enough as to Trade, and will over-reach you if they can.

They are all inclin'd to Venery, and will ſacrifice every thing to gratify that Vice. The Women (who are really very handſome) generally ſit at home all Day croſs-leg'd, and as mute as Fiſhes; but at Night it is cuſtomary for 'em to haunt the Streets veil'd, and will as hardly be refus'd a Favour, as the Men with us on the like Occaſion.

As I was ſitting one Evening in my Lodging, diſpatching ſome Letters for *Spain*, I heard ſome body knock ſoftly at my Door. My Servant was gone abroad, and therefore I aroſe and open'd it my ſelf, but was ſurpriz'd to ſee a Lady veil'd, who, without making any Words, came in and ſat down on a Couch. After ſhe had repos'd her ſelf ſome time, ſhe unveil'd, and diſcover'd to me one of the ſweeteſt Faces I had ever ſeen. I was almoſt turn'd into Stone at the Sight of ſo much Beauty, and was ready to fall down to worſhip her as a Divinity. Said ſhe, I come not here to be gaz'd at; I like you, and if you can do the ſame by me, I believe you will not uſe me ill.

Madam, I return'd, I know no other way to convince you that I like you, but one. With that I took her into

into an Alcove, where we ſoon came to a right Underſtanding. Aſſoon as our ſmall Matter of Buſineſs was over, ſhe deſir'd to be diſmiſs'd, yet with a Promiſe to give me another Viſit the next Evening; but, ſaid ſhe, if you ſhould chance by any Accident to ſee me in any other Place, take your Eyes from the Object, for fear of Danger; for thoſe Meſſengers of the Soul often betray their Truſt. I promis'd to obſerve her Directions, and left her, but yet could not help my Curioſity; for when ſhe was got down Stairs, I put on my Cloak, follow'd her, and obſerv'd ſhe went into the Viceroy's Palace. I was convinc'd, by the Dreſs ſhe wore, that ſhe was none of the common Sort; and much diverted I was at the Accident.

The next Day ſhe did me the Favour of another Viſit, when we paſs'd our time as pleaſantly as we could; and my *Incognita* ſeem'd very much pleas'd with my Company.

After our Toying was over, ſhe told me ſhe was afraid of loſing me, for ſhe had heard I deſign'd for *Spain*. I inform'd her, nothing had Power to ſtop me, but the Paſſion I had for her.

She at laſt diſcover'd herſelf to me: She was Daughter-in-Law to the Viceroy: She told me that ſhe had reſpected me a great while, and had many Diſputes with her Honour and Love; but the former was forc'd to give way to the latter. She likewiſe let me know of her approaching Marriage, and added that the Knowledge of my Perſon would make her Averſion to her Husband the ſtronger. We had many Meetings to the Content of us both; and ſhe made me ſeveral Preſents of Jewels, which I intended to keep for her ſake, having preſerv'd them thro' all my Fortunes. Our Meetings now began to be leſs frequent, being the Wedding-Day was fix'd, which gave me a great deal of Uneaſineſs, To

divert my Melancholy, I uſually took a Walk in the Orange-Grove, where in my muſing Fits, I often ſtaid longer than uſual.

As I was going Home one Evening, I heard the Claſhing of Swords at a Diſtance, and immediately after ſaw a Perſon running towards me, who cry'd, For the Virgin *Mary*'s ſake, if you are a Gentleman, lend me your Sword, to defend my ſelf againſt a Villain who has offer'd me the vileſt Indignity. I made him no Anſwer, but gave him my Sword (for he look'd like a Man of Quality) and follow'd him.

Juſt as I turn'd the Corner I ſaw him engag'd, and his Antagoniſt drop down dead.

The Gentleman ſeeing that took to his Heels.

The Street being alarm'd with the Buſtle, as I came near the Body, I was ſeiz'd as the Murderer. What ſtrengthen'd their Opinion, and I muſt confeſs had but an indifferent Look, was my Sword remaining in the Body of the Deceas'd. All my Aſſeverations of Innocence ſignify'd nothing: I was carried before the *Corrigidore*; but having no Witneſſes of my aſſaulting him, and one Fellow by good Fortune proving I was not the Perſon that engag'd him firſt, I was only once more condemn'd to *Baldivia*. I curs'd my hard Stars a thouſand times, and the Grief of parting from my Miſtreſs was like to rid me of Life; but Time began to wear it off.

I was ſecur'd in the Caſtle of the City till the Veſſel was ready to ſail.

While I was confin'd, in order to be tranſported to *Baldivia*, a Gentleman came into the Priſon, and begg'd half an Hour's Converſation with me. I had been ſo liberal to the Keeper with my Money, and pretty jovial in my Humour, that I believe if I had aſk'd him to let me go, he would not have deny'd me; ſo that I begg'd the Favour to admit the Gentleman, and

and his Abſence, during our Confabulation. He obey'd me in both, and the Gentleman enter'd my Room; which, tho' but mean, was the beſt in the Priſon.

Aſſoon as the Gentleman had repos'd himſelf upon a Chair, (none of the beſt) he ask'd me if I would pleaſe to refreſh my ſelf with any thing the Place afforded: But I anſwering in the Negative, he made half a dozen Humms and Haws, and open'd his Mouth to utter Senſe.

Sir, ſaid he, you ſee before you the unhappy Perſon that is the Occaſion of your Confinement. I ſhould not be thus free with you, if I were not aſſur'd of your generous Good-nature. Once more I muſt tell you, you ſee before you the unhappy Man who is guilty of that Fact, you are to ſuffer for. I am a Gentleman by Birth; and tho' I had not the good Fortune to owe my firſt Being to old *Spain*, yet I have this for my Conſolation, that my Parents were born at *Cordova* there; but the Frowns of Fortune driving them to this Part of the World, grew aſham'd of her ill Looks, and greeted 'em with Smiles of Favour. In a few Years, *Plutus* the God of Wealth made 'em a Viſit, and took his Leave of 'em with a Promiſe of his frequent Return; and he prov'd as good as his Word, for in a little time Fortune became a neuter Gender, that is, believing they did not want her Aſſiſtance, they were no more her Devotees.

Sir, ſaid I, the ſooner you will pleaſe to come to plain *Spaniſh*, the ſooner I ſhall be in the ready Road to your Buſineſs.

Why then, ſaid he, not to keep you in Suſpenſe, I am the Perſon that was oblig'd to you for your Sword on ſuch a Time, which prov'd the Inſtrument of my Revenge on a baſe Wretch, that deſerv'd an Eternity of Torments after this Life, for wronging the beſt of Wo-

men. And since I find you love the shortest Way, without the tedious outward Flourishes of Rhetorick, I will inform you of my Story, with as much Brevity as I am capable of.

My Mother dy'd about seven Years since, and I may very justly say the rest of my Father's Life was a Delirium; but Death taking Pity of his Griefs, came to his Aid, and about two Years ago I was left Master of a plentiful Fortune.

As Death is the End of all things, and Age must pay its Tribute to him, I shook off my Grief for my Father's Loss; and in six Months after his Decease, fell in Love with a young Lady of an incomparable Beauty, at least in my Eye. My Fortune gave me easy Access to the Father of my Fair, and when I had the Happiness of conversing with the Object of my Wishes, she did not seem averse to my Passion. Every thing concurring to my Desires, *Hymen* join'd those Hands whose Hearts were united before.

For several Days we revell'd in the Sweets of Love; and I may justly say, Possession had not the Power to pall Desire; each Moment of Enjoyment seem'd new, and my utmost Wish was center'd in her Breast: But the dire Fiend, tormenting Jealousy, at last crept in, and pall'd my Appetite to ardent Love; the fatal Bitter to our mutual Sweets.

I had a Person that I call'd my Friend, who shar'd the Affluence of Fortune with me: We had the same Desire to Love and Hate: I therefore thought I was but poorly blest till my Friend saw the Idol of my Soul. But oh! what Pangs that fatal Moment cost me! His Eyes receiv'd the Bane to all his Peace, and in one Moment render'd up his Heart. I gave him Leave (for what could I refuse to such a Friend?) to visit my Wife, when Business demanded my Absence. He often declar'd his Passion to her, by plaintive Sighs

and

and languiſhing Looks. When my Wife perceiv'd he importun'd her too far with his Love, ſhe threaten'd to tell me of it; but in the mean time he had acquainted me with what had paſs'd between him and my Wife. Said he, My Friend, I imagin'd your Wife was like other Women, prone to change, therefore in your Abſence I counterfeited a Paſſion for her, to ſee whether ſhe had that Regard ſhe ought to have for you, and I am pleaſed to find you have made ſo worthy a Choice.

I muſt own to you I was mightily pleas'd with this Trial of my Friend, as believing it ſprang from his Kindneſs to me; and I had much to do to reconcile my Wife to his Viſits. She would often ſay, I wiſh your Friend be ſincere in his Profeſſions to you; for my part, I greatly doubt it.

In a little time after this Accident, I perceiv'd my Friend began to look very melancholy; I endeavour'd to ſift the Secret from him, but to no manner of Purpoſe for ſome time.

One Day, as we were riding out to take the Air together, he ſeem'd more deeply plung'd in Sorrow than uſual. I told him I ſhould not take him for my Friend any longer, if he did not let me into the Cauſe of his Diſorder. At laſt with much Reluctance, he told me, that the good Opinion he had before conceiv'd of my Wife was falſe, for he was well-aſſured ſhe was not true to my Bed.

You muſt imagine what a Thunder-clap this muſt be to me, from a Friend who I was aſſur'd in my ſelf would not relate a Falſhood. It was ſome Moments before I could open my Mouth; and all the time of my Silence, he ſeem'd ſo much griev'd that he had declar'd the Secret to me, that I had no Doubt of the Truth of it.

When my Grief had given me Liberty of Speech, I begg'd he would give me the Foundation of his Suſpicion; but he deſir'd to be excus'd till he had certain Proof of her Infidelity, which he did not doubt but he ſhould ſoon have, though it was what he wiſh'd to be deceiv'd in: And farther added, he would not have me take any Notice of it, but carry it fair to her, as if nothing had happen'd; for if you ſhould, ſaid he, you will never come to the Truth of the Matter.

I promis'd to comply with him, and went Home; but Heaven knows with what a Heart.

I follow'd my Friend's Advice punctually, but yet could not help ſhowing the Diſcontent of my Mind in my Countenance. My Wife was mightily concern'd for my Melancholy, and was very preſſing to know the Cauſe; and in a very tender manner ſeem'd to be diſquieted, which I took all for Art, and the Cunning of her Sex.

I muſt own to you, that ſometimes I imagin'd my Friend had deceiv'd me; but whenever we had an Opportunity of converſing, he ſtrengthen'd my Jealouſy to ſuch a Degree, that I began to wiſh the Cauſe of it no longer in this World. And if it had not been for my revenging my ſelf on the ſuppos'd Partner of her Guilt, I had certainly taken Methods to diſpatch her hence.

I had ſome Affairs to tranſact at *Segovia* every Year; and the time drawing on for my Journey, my Friend told me, before my Return I ſhould have Demonſtration of her Infidelity; for, ſaid he, your Abſence will give her the Opportunity ſhe wants, and ſhe'll be ſure to take hold of it.

It was a great while before I could be prevail'd upon by my Friend, to undertake really this Journey, but only to feign as if I had, that I might be convinced

vinced of her Perfidy, and puniſh it my ſelf; but my Friend laid me down ſo many Reaſons for it, that I at laſt very unwillingly agreed to go. But in the mean time, ſaid he, you muſt order that I may have Admittance in your Abſence, that I may take my Opportunity to obſerve all Paſſages. Why, ſaid I, I never knew you debarr'd the Liberty of my Houſe. But you know, ſaid he, ſince my falſe Declaration of Love to try your Wife's Virtue, ſhe has look'd upon me more like an Enemy than a Friend, as knowing I was not ſincere in my Paſſion; for Women, be they ever ſo vicious, yet they abhor the Man that doubts their Virtue. Well then, ſaid I, if you will, we'll ſup together to-night; and then I'll take an Opportunity to leave Directions with my faithleſs Wife, to allow you the ſame Privileges in my Abſence, as you now have. Why then, return'd my Friend, don't you be ſurpris'd at what I ſhall ſay to her.

We parted and went to prepare every thing for my intended Journey. When I was at Dinner with my Wife, I gave her ſome Hints concerning my Friend, and that I deſir'd he ſhould have Admittance in my Abſence; I obſerv'd ſhe chang'd Colour at my Diſcourſe, and ſeem'd to be in the utmoſt Confuſion, altho' I did not ſeem to ſee it.

After ſome Talk about indifferent Matters, ſhe told me, if I thought fit, ſhe intended to live private in my Abſence, and admit of no Viſitors. For Sir, ſaid ſhe, the World will be cenſorious, and receiving Viſits from a Man, when you are from Home, is not conſiſting with our *Spaniſh* Cuſtoms. She found by my Diſcourſe that I was determin'd it ſhould be ſo, wherefore ſhe left off arguing upon that Subject: but I could perceive all the time we were together, my Reſolves ſat very uneaſy upon her; and it was with much Difficulty ſhe reſtrain'd her Tears. Her Sorrow ſtruck me to the Heart, and it

was

was the greateſt Struggle I ever went through to keep my Temper: For I imagin'd all her Grief was to have this Spy upon her Actions.

When Night approach'd, my Friend came according to Appointment, and during our Supper, I told my Wife, ſhe was to look upon him as my only Friend, and give him the ſame Admittance, as if it was my ſelf, in every thing he ſhould deſire; well knowing (I told her) he would ask nothing contrary to our ſtrict Amity.

Sir, ſaid my Friend, I am very ſorry I can't comply with your Deſires; for I have receiv'd Letters from a near Relation at *Panama*, and I am obliged to attend his Nuptials, being he can't make proper Marriage Settlements without I am upon the Spot, and I fear I ſhall hardly return this ſix Weeks. I was at firſt very much ſurpriz'd at this his ſudden Reſolution, and was going to ſay ſomething upon't, till I obſerv'd he wink'd at me. I then began to remember what he ſaid to me in the Morning, that I ſhould not take Notice of what he ſaid. But I obſerv'd, the Cloud upon my Wife's Face began to diſappear by degrees, which ſeem'd to me the greateſt Proof of her Infidelity. I was ſo provok'd with the imaginary Wrong, that I could not help ſhewing it in Words and Actions; but yet I had ſo much Reaſon in my Madneſs (for Paſſion is no leſs) that I conceal'd the real Cauſe.

My Wife ſeem'd confounded at my incoherent Anger, having never ſeen my Fury before; and when my Friend was gone, begg'd I would tell her the real Cauſe of my Uneaſineſs, for ſhe was well aſſur'd ſome ſecret Cauſe had ruffled my Temper; but I perſiſted in the Obſtinacy of not diſcovering it to her, and the next Day purſu'd my Journey with a diſmal Idea of what was to come.

Thought had ſo much impair'd my Strength, with its violent Workings, that I found it a difficult thing to

ſit

at my Horſe; and when I came to my Inn at Night, I was carry'd to Bed in a violent Fever, and all Night was in a Delirium. My Servants ſent for a Phyſician, who gave me ſomething to reſiſt my Malady; and while he was with me, I utter'd ſome Words in my Ravings, that gave him to underſtand my Diſeaſe proceeded from the Mind. When I came to my ſelf, I was ſomething ſurpriz'd to hear him ſpeak to me after this Manner.

Sir, I have ſo long dealt with Diſeaſes of moſt kinds, that I have Knowledge enough to perceive when they proceed from an ill habit of Body, or thoſe Maladies of the Mind that ſlight all Phyſic; and be not amaz'd when I tell you, I have often cur'd the Latter by wholſome Advice. You are a young Man, and perhaps may have taken a wrong Conception of Things; if you will be pleas'd to tell me your Caſe, I'll give you my Advice without a Fee; and don't think me impertinent to deſire it, I have ſeen more Years than you. You may conceal your Name in your Relation, and if my Advice does not pleaſe you, you are but juſt where you were: I ſhall be as faithful in keeping your Secret, as your Confeſſor.

You may be aſſur'd I was very much ſurpriz'd at his Proceeding, and I eaſily perceiv'd a Sincerity in his Diſcourſe, that gain'd him my Eſteem; and I was reſolv'd to let him into my Story; which I did, as much as I have to you.

After a Pauſe, he ſaid I had juſt come up to his Imagination of my Caſe; and now Sir, (ſaid he) I will proceed to my Advice. Conſider well what you are about; you have confeſs'd, your Friend own'd to you he made pretended Love to your Wife to try her Virtue, and yet I don't find he adviſ'd with you about it before he had put his Device in Practice. To give you my Sentiments of this Matter, I believe your Friend to be falſe to you, and that he really is in Love with your Wife.

Wife. The Diſtreſs of your Spouſe, proceeded from her Indignation to him, and Love to you. His telling you, after his Attempt upon her, was no more than to be the firſt in the Declaration, as imagining ſhe would of courſe inform you with it! her keeping it a Secret from you, was, not to make you uneaſy; and his declaring his Suſpicion of her Virtue afterwards, was either to be reveng'd on her for ſlighting his Paſſion, or to give him an Opportunity in your Abſence to wrong your Wife.

This, in ſhort, I fancy will prove the whole Truth. Neither is this Judgment hard to make, for I am apt to believe any diſintereſted Perſon would make the ſame Judgment; your Paſſion has blinded yours; yet nevertheleſs, if you can give your ſelf time to think calmly, I don't in the leaſt doubt but you'll be of my Opinion. This I am aſſur'd of, Jealouſy is a certain Sign of Love; and if you ſhould in the heat of Paſſion do a raſh Deed, every Moment of your Life will prove a Torment to you. Lovers Eyes are often falſe, and too quick in falſe Creations. Call Reaſon to your Aſſiſtance; that will prove your beſt Friend. Take ſome time to think of my Advice and Counſel; Friends may aſſoon prove falſe as Wives, and you had better loſe the former than the latter.

All the while he was ſpeaking, methought I was liſtening to an Oracle; and at the end of his Diſcourſe, I could not help blaming my ſelf for my raſh Belief. I call'd over in my Memory every Moment of my Wife's Behaviour, and could not find any one Action ſtart up, to give me that hard Opinion I had raſhly conceiv'd againſt her.

I return'd the Phyſician of my Mind, as well as Body, many Thanks for his cordial Advice; and would have paid him in another Coin, but I could not prevail upon him to take a ſingle Dollar. No, ſaid he, in accepting of

of your Money, I ſhall make it appear, that, like Lawyers, I pleaded for my Fee. No Sir, all the Recompence I ſhall ask of you, is only to let me know the Truth of every thing, when the Cataſtrophe is over, which I hope will not affect your Wife; And if I might throw in one Word of Advice more, if you prove the Friend you have ſo much confided in to be falſe, ſhew your Reſentment by ſlighting him, and leave Revenge to Heaven. I promis'd to follow his judicious Advice in every Thing, and ſo we parted with a very good Regard for each other.

I was reſolved to proceed no further on my Journey, but make the beſt of my Way back again; and as I went along, conſider of my Behaviour, and let Time alone for Proof. The Reaſon I gave my Servants for returning, was, that I had not Strength to purſue my Journey; which in Reality was no Falſhood, for I was weak enough; and I am convinc'd, that Diſorders of the Mind weaken the Body more than habitual Diſtempers. In part of my Journey back, I could not come to any Reſolution how to behave; and therefore reſolved to lie one more Night upon the Road, to ſee if my Pillow would adviſe me. When I arriv'd at my Inn, one of my Servants told me *Don Roderigo* was juſt alighted. Hearing him nam'd, my Blood ran a wild Courſe about my Body, and immediately it ſtruck to my Mind ſomething was not right.

I ask'd my Servant, if *Roderigo* had ſeen him; he told me no, and that he ſeem'd diſguis'd, as if he did not deſire to be known. This ſtrengthen'd my Suſpicion of ſome Ill intended, or done already, and that he was making his Eſcape. I order'd my Servants not to appear: But when Supper was ready, I ſent for my Hoſt to bear me Company; where, after ſome trivial Diſcourſe, I ask'd him what Gueſts he had in the Houſe. He made no Scruple in telling me; but when he came

to

to *Don Roderigo*, he declar'd he did not much like him; for he ſeem'd very willing to be private with two of his Servants, and he had obſerv'd 'em often whiſpering. They deſign, ſaid he, to be going very early in the Morning, but I don't know which Road they travel. I conceal'd my Diſturbance of Mind from my Hoſt, but reſolv'd to be going as early as *Don Roderigo*; and to be ſure of being early enough, I determin'd not to go to Bed, notwithſtanding the Weakneſs of my Body requir'd Repoſe.

In the middle of the Night, I heard People whiſpering in the next Room, and I could eaſily diſtinguiſh *Roderigo*'s Voice: tho' I could gather little of their Diſcourſe, yet I could hear mine and my Wife's Name often mention'd.

At break of Day, I found they were preparing to be gone; and tho' I was pretty expeditious, yet they were got out of the Inn, before I could get on Horſe-back with my Servants. I was much vex'd at it, yet purſu'd my Journey homeward. But I was very much amaz'd, when about two Leagues from *Lima*, I met my Wife in a Coach with her Maid, and two *Indian* Servants. The Servants, aſſoon as they ſaw me, were overjoy'd, and my Wife could not open her Mouth for ſome time. I then began to relapſe into my former Jealouſy, and imagin'd ſhe was following *Don Roderigo*.

At laſt ſhe open'd her Mouth with a great deal of Joy. Lord, my Dear (ſaid ſhe) is it you in Reality, or are my Senſes deceiv'd? I ask'd her the Reaſon of her Journey, and her mighty Surprize. Sir, anſwer'd ſhe, that Queſtion confounds me; have I not a Letter from you, to come with all Speed imaginable? Here it is, continu'd ſhe. I took the Letter from her, and read the Contents.

My

My Dear,

PUrſuing my Journey, I had the Misfortune to fall from my Horſe, and break my Arm, which prevents my writing to you. The Accident is attended with a violent Fever, which I am told is very dangerous. I have refrain'd writing to you till now, as expecting ſome Amendment; but finding my ſelf worſe, I beg you will come to me with all the Expedition imaginable, for fear you ſhould never ſee me more alive.

Your Affectionate Husband.

There needed no Sphynx to unriddle this Enigma; and I obſerv'd, by my Wife's Countenance, we both knew the Author of the Letter. While we were conſin'd, the Coachman that drove the Coach was ſtealing away; but my Wife cry'd out to ſtop him, for that was the Meſſenger that brought the Letter to her; and farther told her, he was to conduct her to me, for the Coachman we had before was drown'd; and that Circumſtance deceiv'd her more than any thing elſe: The Fellow alſo told her that I had prevail'd with a Gentleman in the Neighbourhood where I lay hurt, to ſend him to drive the Coach. I rid after the Fellow and brought him back, order'd him into the Coach-box, and forc'd him to drive out of the Road to a neighbouring Village, where liv'd a Gentleman of my Acquaintance. He very unwillingly comply'd with my Commands; and we kept very cloſe to him, to prevent his making away. When we arriv'd at my Friend's Houſe, we ſecur'd the Fellow in a ſtrong Room, and I left two of my *Indian* Servants to guard him. I made my Friend acquainted with the Accident, and that this Viſit was not intended, but by meer Chance. He gave me to know I was welcome, let what would bring me there.

When

When my Wife and I with my Friend were alone, I tenderly embrac'd her, and begg'd her Pardon for my unjuſt Suſpicions of her Virtue, and related the whole Progreſs of my Jealouſy, without omitting the leaſt Circumſtance. She gave thanks to Heav'n, for the Danger ſhe was ſav'd from, and related to me the manner of her being deceiv'd by the Fellow that brought the Letter, as follows.

The fifth Day after you had left me, as I was muſing in the Garden, my Maid told me a Perſon had a Letter to deliver me from you. I began to tremble with timorous Apprehenſion, and my whole Frame felt violent Diſorders. I order'd the Bearer to be brought to me; and when I had read the Letter, Grief lock'd up my Tongue, and I had not power to ſpeak for ſome time. When I had recover'd Speech, I ask'd the Fellow where you were. Madam, ſaid he, he is at Don *Florio*'s Country-houſe, *(naming a Friend of mine, that my Wife had heard me often mention)* and knowing you had never a Coachman, my Maſter ſent me to conduct you to your Husband. I would not ſpend time in dreſſing my ſelf, but juſt as I was, with my Maid, and the two *Indians*, purſu'd our Journey. I never once dream'd of any Treachery, tho' I always doubted your falſe Friend; but as he had never been to viſit me in your Abſence, it wip'd away all Suſpicions of him. I obſerv'd the Coachman, by his Looks, did not like the Company of my Servants, but I was too much concern'd for you to think of it much.

We congratulated one another again at our happy Deliverance, and admir'd the Workings of Divine Providence, and the ſecond Cauſe, my friendly Phyſician.

My Wife expreſs'd a great Deſire to ſee him, to return him Acknowledgments for his inſpir'd Advice, and in the Morning I promis'd her to go to him, if we could get any convenient Carriage: For we were not very

very fond of making Uſe of the Coachman that brought her out.

I defer'd his Examination till the next Day, being too much fatigu'd to do it then, tho' I had order'd he ſhould want nothing but his Liberty; for I conſider'd him only as an Inſtrument to work his Maſter's Ends. When I was up in the Morning, I order'd him to be brought before me; but after ſome time, they brought me Word he had made his Eſcape, by creeping through the Ciel-ing of the Room, and throwing down the Shingles; for it was a ſingle Apartment near the Garden. I was a little uneaſy at his getting away, as well as my Wife, for fear his Maſter ſhould make ſome Attempt upon us in the Houſe where we were; it being a quarter of a Mile from the Village, and the Gentleman, my Friend, had but few Servants. Therefore it was thought the ſafeſt Courſe for us to go immediately to *Lima*. And aſſoon as we could procure Mules, we ſet out, and reach'd that City without Moleſtation.

I heard nothing of the faithleſs *Roderigo* for ſeveral Days, neither did I think it ſtrange; for I imagin'd, if he had any Shame left, he would not dare to appear pub-lickly at *Lima*; but if he did, I had reſolv'd to take my friendly Phyſician's Advice, (which had prov'd ſo ſuc-ceſsful to me) to ſhow my Reſentment in ſlighting him.

One Night, as ſoft Repoſe had lock'd up our Senſes, we were alarm'd from our downy Sleep, by a fearful Cry of Fire! Fire! I roſe, and ran into my Wife's Apart-ment, where ſhe remain'd frighted almoſt to death; and as People generally in the Alarm of Fire know not what they do, ſhe ran to the Chamber where the Maids lay, and dreſs'd herſelf in her Servant's Clothes; the Maid bei ng equally frighted, when ſhe found ſhe had no Clothes to put on, clap'd on her Miſtreſs's which I had brought after her, and was running down Stairs to free herſelf from the Danger. As ſhe was going through the Hall,

I obſerv'd four Men in Masks ſeiz'd her, and carry'd her off. I follow'd with my Sword in my Hand, till one of the villainous Company came behind me, and run me through the Back. My Servants, who came after me, bore me in faint with loſs of Blood; but by good Fortune the Wound did not prove dangerous, tho' well meant.

We could never come by the Truth how the Houſe was ſet on Fire, tho' it was ſoon extinguiſh'd; but we were aſſur'd it muſt be by ſome one of the Domeſtics. It was eaſy to judge Don *Roderigo* was the Cauſe on't, by running away with the Maid, as miſtaking her for my Wife, becauſe ſhe had in the Hurry put on her Miſtreſs's Clothes and Vail.

I was adviſ'd, by my beſt Friends, to ſummon him before the ſupream Judge, for it was dangerous to let him go on with Impunity. But he would not obey the Summons, therefore he was deſign'd to be out-law'd by due Courſe of Law. But as that takes up ſeveral Months, I was oblig'd to keep a Guard in my Houſe; for I received ſeveral menacing Letters frequently from him, either thrown over the Wall, or left ſo, that we could never ſecure any Perſon that brought 'em. While our Suit was going on, our new Vice-Roy arriv'd, who proving a Friend to Don *Roderigo*, a *nolle proſequi* was iſſued out, and I was obliged to ſtand at the whole Charge of the Law-ſuit. This violent and unjuſt Proceeding of the Vice-Roy's rais'd my Gall to that degree, that I ſaid many warm things againſt his Adminiſtration, which came to his Knowledge: for there are generally poor-ſpirited Wretches in all Governments, that have no other Merit than to improve Tales, and feed the Ears of their Superiors with nauſeous Flattery and Lyes.

I was ſent for to the Vice-Roy, and examin'd concerning theſe Reports; and I ſo far incens'd him with my Replies to his Queſtions, that if I had not met with ſome

Friends

Friends that palliated the Matter, I don't know how far his Resentment would have carry'd him. I was dismiss'd with my Liberty, but a Multitude of Menaces, if for the future I ever gave my Tongue another loose; and I soon found the Effects of his Resentment, by losing a small Place in the Government; but as Providence had put me above wanting it, I was not much griev'd at the Loss.

My Wife begg'd me to remove from *Lima*, a Place where I had receiv'd so many Insults; and it was not improbable but I might receive more; which prov'd but too true.

In a few Days after I had appear'd before the Vice-Roy, the Maid that was forc'd away (by mistaking her for my Wife) came home, miserably ill us'd, and brought me a Letter from the ungrateful Don *Roderigo*, which you may read if you please: Upon that he took the Letter out of his Pocket, and I found it as follows.

I *Declare my self your inveterate Enemy, tho' I have no just Reason to be so; you may be sure my Enmity is rooted for ever in my Heart, and I shall have no Rest in this World, till thou art out of it. I should not perhaps be so free in declaring my Mind by Writing, if I was not very well assur'd, thy publishing it would do thee no good. I have so much Honour in me still, as to assure thee, I would venture my Life to hazard thine, and if I have ever the Opportunity, I shall put it to the Hazard; therefore be well guarded whenever thou appearest abroad. Minds like mine are never appeas'd. I always was a Villain, but had so much Cunning to hide it from the World till now this Affair has publish'd it. And be assur'd, I shall study every way to compass my Revenge, whilst I am*

Roderigo.

The

The Insolence of this Letter was not to be born, and I was as impatient to meet him, as he could be to meet with me; and I must own to you, I thirsted for his Blood, for his Usage was beyond the Nature of Man to bear. I examin'd the poor Girl of what she knew of the Wretch, who inform'd me that they put her into a Coach, and carry'd her a League out of Town; but when they found their Mistake, the Usage she bore from 'em was insupportable, and the Brute *Roderigo* told his Servants, if they pleas'd to make use of her in the vilest Manner, they were welcome. The Wretches that serv'd such a Villain, must have very near the same Sentiments of Honour and Honesty, or they would seek another Master; they were too forward to neglect such a Cruelty, and four of 'em by turns ravish'd her. Strangers to the Nature of the Wretches, who are Superiors in this Part of the World, would imagine such Deeds should find Punishment by Law: But alas! Justice is fled the Place, and we may expect more Mercy from the worst of Cannibals, than is to be found here.

The poor Creature in a little Time felt the farther Effects of their Cruelty; for they gave her a Distemper that ended her Life.

Before her Death she gave me Knowledge of the Place where they led her; for they had not any Caution in their villainous Proceeding, but assoon as they had gratify'd their Lust and Cruelty, turn'd her out of Doors.

I had no farther need of any thing to whet my Revenge; but I must own, the Death of this unfortunate poor Creature added Fuel to the Fire. My Wife was almost distracted at the unhappy Accident, and had no other Consolation, but that she had escap'd their cruel Hands.

I did not acquaint her with my Intention of seeking this Villain, but I made it my only Business; I went to the Place the poor Maid had directed me, where I had Information that he had left the Place, and now

reside

reſided in *Lima*. I was very ſorry he had chang'd his Habitation, becauſe I ſhould find it a more difficult thing to execute my Reſentment with Safety in *Lima*. But however, I ſent him the following Letter.

THY Uſage to me is not to be born; therefore, if thou haſt that Spirit, (which I much queſtion from thy Villainy, for Villains are always Cowards) meet me in St. Juſtin's *Field to-morrow at ſix in the Morning; as I imagine there is no Second in thy Villainy, I ſhall expect thee alone, and I hope thou wilt not fail to meet the injur'd*

Alonzo de Caſtro.

I choſe St. *Juſtin*'s Field, for the Conveniency of a ſmall Publick-houſe which over-look'd it, where I went before Day, that I might diſcover if he came alone; for I had but little reaſon to expect fair Play from ſuch a Villain. When the time came, I ſaw him go by the Houſe alone; I let him paſs by me, to ſee if he was not follow'd by any of his curſed Crew; but finding none, I haſted after him, into the middle of the Field, and call'd to him; he turn'd about, and with the Image of Hell in his Face, he cry'd, I thought your Reſentment would have brought you firſt into the Field: But as I am here before you, it ſpeaks me no Coward, tho' your vile Scrawl would intimate as much. Come, ſaid I, no Words, thy Breath is Poiſon to me, it will infect the Air; Only this Sir, ſaid he, as you had not nam'd any particular Weapon, I have made bold to bring a pair of Piſtols with me, and to let you ſee I have ſome Honour, you ſhall take your Choice. I gave him no Anſwer, but took one, and we agreed to ſtand at ſuch a Diſtance. As I was going to Fire, he cry'd out Hold! I will tell you one Secret more before we engage, and that's this; Your Piſtol is only charg'd with Powder,

Powder, but mine with Ball, which I put in ſince you made the Choice; and now prepare for Death, be aſſur'd this is the laſt Moment of thy Life. I did not give my ſelf time to anſwer, but fir'd my Piſtol, and then hurl'd it at him, and had the good Fortune to cut him in the Face with it; and in the Confuſion and Surprize his Piſtol went off without hurting me. Now, ſaid I, thou Wretch! we are once more on equal Terms, and Heav'n I hope will favour the juſteſt Cauſe. We drew, and in a few Paſſes I laid him for dead on the Ground; tho' in the Encounter I had receiv'd a dangerous Wound in the Breaſt. I went home, notwithſtanding my Hurt, and ſent ſecretly for a Surgeon of my Acquaintance, who dreſs'd me, and told me I was in no Danger.

My Wife was very much griev'd at the Accident, tho' ſhe could not but be pleas'd at *Roderigo*'s Death; yet her Fears increas'd, as imagining I ſhould ſuffer for it, by the violent Temper of the Vice-roy: But her Grief began to blow over, when in ſeveral Days after no Enquiry was made, nor even any Notice taken of his Death.

I was very much ſurpriz'd at it, imagining I had really kill'd him.

Aſſoon as my Wound was well, I went to the little Houſe to enquire if they knew any thing of the Body; (for the Owner of the Houſe was formerly my Servant, and a Man of much Probity, who knew all my Story;) he inform'd me, that a little while after I paſt by his Houſe home again, five Perſons ran that way, and coming to the Body, ſeem'd to mourn over it, and went the Road that leads to St. *Dominick*; *a Village about half a Mile from the Place where we fought.*

I imagin'd they had bury'd him privately in that Village, and went home to acquaint my Wife, who ſhar'd my Contentment.

I

I now went abroad as I was wont, and all the Diſcourſe was of Don *Roderigo*'s ſudden diſappearing. Servants and all had left his Houſe, but no one ſuſpected any thing of his Death. Some of my Acquaintance told me, they imagin'd this to be ſome Trick of his, and that he only lay dormant to meditate ſome Miſchief to me.

I ſeem'd to come into their Fears, but in my Mind ſlighted their Advice, as imagining I had nothing to fear. I paſt on a whole Month without any Danger at all; but as I was going one Day acroſs the Bridge to a Warehouſe I had in the Suburbs, a Fellow came up to me, and privately ask'd me if I would be his Chapman for ſome *Eaſt-India* Goods. He told me a long Story, that he was oblig'd to make up a Cargo and leave this Part of the World, for his Credit began to fail, and if he did not get away ſpeedily, his Creditors would lay him up. We went to a neighbouring Tavern, where he read me his Bill of Parcels. He told me he had been encourag'd to offer his Goods to me, from the fairneſs of my Character; and was coming to wait on me when he had the good Fortune to meet me. The next Day was agreed on for me to go and view the Goods, for I was not to pay for 'em till they were enter'd my Warehouſe. Accordingly, as appointed, I went to the Houſe of the Perſon, in the *Benedictine* Street. I was ſhown into a Room till the Goods were brought; but as I was looking on ſome Paintings, five Men ruſh'd out of a Cloſet in the Room, and ſeiz'd me. They diſarm'd me, took out every thing that was in my Pockets, went out, and lock'd me in. You may imagine the Surprize I was in, which was very much increas'd when I ſaw my Enemy *Don Roderigo* enter the Room. I in my Confuſion thought I had ſeen a Ghoſt, for he look'd very pale; but he ſoon convinc'd

me of the contrary. And have I got you at laſt? ſaid he: I now will revenge my ſelf at leiſure; but to compleat my Revenge, I have ſent a Token for your Wife, that I may raviſh her before thy Face; and then I'll deviſe Tortures to rack every Joint about thee. He gave me to know that he had ſent my Watch for a Token, and that ſhe would bring ſuch a Sum of Money to pay for the Goods. The Torment of my Soul no Tongue can expreſs; and I am aſſur'd, if they had not taken my Sword from me, I had put an End to my wretched Life.

The inhumane Villain inſulted me ſo much, that I ruſh'd upon him, unarm'd as I was, and had certainly choak'd him, if his wicked Aſſiſtants had not dragg'd me from him.

It is well, ſaid he, I have no other Paſſion but Luſt reigning in my Breaſt at this Inſtant; but when I have ſated my Deſires on thy Wife, I'll then add another Pang for this Uſage; but in the mean time I'll leave you to think of this Matter alone, for I fancy you don't much care for my Company.

Aſſoon as he had made an End of this Speech, he and his Gang went out, and faſten'd the Door on the other ſide. I'll give you Leave to imagine the Confuſion of my Thoughts. I remain'd ſome time without moving; but accidentally caſting my Eyes on the Door, I obſerv'd there was a Bar to ſhut it on the inſide. I immediately bar'd it, and began to look about to ſee if I could find any thing for my Defence; but to my Grief could perceive nothing. I enter'd the Cloſet, and ſearch'd there, but to no purpoſe. Looking upon the Floor of the Cloſet, I perceiv'd one of the Boards ſeem'd to be looſe: I eſſay'd to pull it up, but wanted ſome Engine to effect it. I at laſt thought of the Bar of the Door, ran to it, and by main Force wrench'd it from

the

the Staple; for I thought if it would not ſerve me to make my Eſcape, it would ſerve me to defend my ſelf: but I eaſily forc'd up the Board, and with my Bar beat down the Cieling under me. I was reſolv'd to explore the hidden Place, whatever was the Conſequence; for it could not be worſe than to remain where I was. I therefore ventur'd down, though ſomething of a difficult Deſcent; for the Joiſts were ſo cloſe together, I had much ado to force my Body through; but at laſt, with much Difficulty, I preſs'd through, and had a deſperate Fall to the Ground.

I ſoon found I had got into a Cooper's Cellar, for there were ſeveral Pipe-ſtaves, and Tools to work with. I ſeiz'd upon ſome of them, and by Force wrench'd open the Cellar-Door, which led me once more into the Street before *Don Roderigo*'s Houſe. I did not give my ſelf Time to conſider, but ran towards the Bridge to get to my own Houſe; and juſt as I enter'd the *Cordeliers* Street, I met my Wife with her Maid, and the Wretch that had decoy'd me to the Houſe. I ran upon him, ſeiz'd him by the Throat, and flung him over the Bridge, where he met with the Reward of his Villainy. I had not Power of Speech to inform my Wife of the Accident, but made Signs for her to go home. By this time it was dark; and the profligate Villain *Don Roderigo*, fancying his curſed Emiſſary ſtaid too long, came out of his Door which fac'd the Bridge. Aſſoon as I diſcover'd him, I ran towards him, and ſeiz'd him: Now Villain, ſaid I, I will not part with thee till thou haſt render'd up thy Soul to Hell. We both ſtruggled, and I kept him down; but the reſt of his Company coming up to his Aſſiſtance, I quitted him; and running to ſee if I could meet with ſome one arm'd, I had the good Fortune to light on you. Aſſoon as I receiv'd your Sword, I ran back, and juſt met the Villain as he was entring his Door. I ran the

Weapon into his very Heart; and I believe you were a better Witneſs of his Death than my ſelf, being you were found near the Body.

Aſſoon as I ſaw him fall I made the beſt of my way home, not imagining you would meet with any farther Damage than the Loſs of your Sword.

The Darkneſs of the Night, I fancy, conceal'd me from the Servants that came to the Aſſiſtance of their Maſter, for I never once was ſuſpected; or perhaps if they did know me, Fear kept them from diſcovering me.

When I heard of your Tryal, I came my ſelf into Court, and if you had been condemn'd, reſolv'd to have diſcover'd the Truth; but finding you were to be baniſhed to *Baldivia*, I conceal'd the Fact, imagining I had it in my Power to gain your Freedom, by paying your Ranſom; which was the Reaſon I came now to wait upon you, to offer you my Service in that, or any thing elſe that lies in my Power. I return'd him Thanks for his Offer; and conſidering his Story, I told him I was glad I was in ſome ſort an Inſtrument of his Revenge. He would force upon me a Ring, and two hundred Pieces of Gold, and begg'd he might be rank'd in the Number of my Friends. He made me many Viſits, and once brought his Wife with him. She was a very handſome Woman, and ſeem'd to have a great deal of Wit. She made me ſeveral very handſome Compliments in behalf of her Husband, and begg'd I would accept of their Pictures ſet round with fine oriental Pearls.

He accompany'd me on Board when our Veſſel was to ſet Sail, putting in the Captain's Hands freſh Proviſion, and ſeveral ſorts of good Liquor to comfort me in my Voyage.

I had the Happineſs to have Pirates for my Fellow-Sufferers; and the Vice-roy had given out, to take off all Cenſure from him, that I encourag'd them in their Piracy.

We took our Leaves, with Proteſtations of a laſting Friendſhip; and I liv'd as merrily as I could, till the Day we had the good Fortune to meet with you, which has not given me any Reaſon to change my Humour.

WE were mightily diverted with the Relation of *Don Pedro*, and I found I was not deceiv'd when I took him for a Man that underſtood the World.

We had now gain'd the Streights of *Gibraltar*; and had enter'd the *Mediterranean* Sea: But I muſt confeſs I could not ſee the *African* Shore, without Numbers of Sighs for Misfortunes paſt; and I found my Griefs renew'd with the Remembrance: And all the Mitigation I had was the affectionate Concern from *Don Ferdinand*, to whom I had told my whole Story. We had not made a Day's Sail in the *Mediterranean*, ere we perceiv'd two Sail making towards us. I muſt own I had no Deſire to engage, being ſo richly laden; and therefore, by the Advice of both the Ships Company, made all the Sail I could to avoid 'em. But our Veſſels being foul with ſo long a Voyage, and never once clean'd during our whole Courſe, they gain'd upon us, do what we could. When we found there was no getting from 'em without Fighting, we were as much determin'd on the other Hand to fight our Ships to the Bottom of the Sea rather than ſurrender. Having fix'd this Reſolution, we prepar'd for the Engagement; and when we had got all Things in Readineſs, we leſſen'd our Sails that they might come up to us. I order'd every Sailor to load as many ſmall Arms as they could, and not to fire

a Gun till I gave 'em Orders; but aſſoon as ever they had fir'd the great Guns, to diſcharge their ſmall Arms upon 'em. I could not prevail upon *Don Ferdinand* to keep below, though I ſaw Fear livelily painted in his Face. When they came within Piſtol-ſhot of our Ship they hail'd us, and commanded us to ſtrike immediately. We made no other Anſwer than with our Guns and ſmall Arms, which ſurpriz'd 'em, and did 'em a great deal of Damage in their Rigging; for cutting the Topſail Halliards with our Shot, the Topſail fell down upon the Cap, and hinder'd their Ship's Way very much; and I believe we might have made our Eſcape. But I perceiv'd the *Villars* was hard put to it, (our *Spaniſh* Man of War, whom I had nam'd the *Villars* in Remembrance of that dear One) By this time we were prepar'd again, and I order'd every Man, aſſoon as they had diſcharg'd, to lye flat upon their Bellies till we had receiv'd the Fire of the Enemy; which accordingly we did. They fir'd in upon us, but kill'd us not one Man. Then our Hands roſe up all together, and fir'd in our ſmall Shot. We had ſo damag'd their Rigging with this Broadſide, that we fell aſtern till we were charg'd again; and then I gave our Men Orders to fire into the Body of the Ship, and point their Guns low on purpoſe; which we ſoon found had the deſir'd Effect: For they had ſeveral Shots between Wind and Water, ſo that they were oblig'd to heel the Ship on the Starboard Side, to prevent the Water running in on the Larboard. I ſeeing there was not much to be fear'd from her, bore down to aſſiſt the *Villars*, becauſe ſhe was over-match'd. But when her Antagoniſt found my Deſign, and underſtood the Condition of the other Ship, ſhe made all the Sail ſhe could, and fled for it. We did not think fit to follow her, but ſent a Boat on Board, to enquire how it ſtood with 'em in the *Villars*. They ſent me Word they

they had loſt eight Men, had three wounded, and were very much mawl'd in their Rigging, as well as their Hull, and had receiv'd a Shot between Wind and Water, and the Ship leak'd very much. I bad 'em ſearch for it; but there was no coming at it; therefore I order'd them to get out as many of the Goods as they could, and bring them on Board me. The Weather proving very favourable, they went to Work as faſt as they could.

Our Men brought me Word that the Ship we had engag'd was ſinking. They fir'd ſeveral Guns for Aſſiſtance, and their Conſort being almoſt out of Sight, I bore down to help them all I could; but before we could come to 'em ſhe ſunk to the Bottom. The Men had put out their Long-boat and Barge, and were got in them, and made towards us. Aſſoon as they came within hearing, they call'd out for *Quarter*, which I promis'd them they ſhould have. There were 123 of them; and as their Number exceeded ours, we were oblig'd to confine them, for fear they ſhould take it in their Heads to ſet upon us.

The Captain was kill'd in the Engagement, but the Lieutenant inform'd me they were two Men of War, of forty Guns each, ſet out from *Barcelona* to cruiſe upon the Coaſt; and mann'd each with two hundred Men: But the reſt of their Crew were either kill'd, or being wounded ſunk with the Ship. I did not think it proper to carry them to *Italy*, for fear it ſhould prove prejudicial to *Don Antonio*; and underſtanding that in removing the Goods on Board the *Villars*, they had found out the Leak and ſtopp'd it, I intended to put them on Board her, and give them the Ship with their Liberty; but firſt I order'd out the Guns and Ammunition, and her Goods, leaving them nothing but Proviſion and Water, which

they return'd me many Thanks for, and ſo we parted.

The next Day there aroſe ſuch a Storm as we had never felt before, and continu'd in the utmoſt Violence for fourteen Days, ſo that now we were in Danger of drowning: and I believe moſt would have parted with their Wealth to have been ſafe on Shore. At laſt we diſcover'd Land, but were very much ſurpriz'd to find it *Candia*, for now we began to be in fear of the *Turkiſh* Pirates. So we reſolv'd to ſteer for *Zant* as faſt as we could, and there make Dividend of our Prize-Money and Goods. And accordingly we arriv'd there ſafely, *Sept.* 3. 1696.

This Iſland of *Zant* belongs to the *Venetians*, therefore we were out of Danger from the *Turks*. The Town, which bears the ſame Name with the Iſland, is above a Mile in Length, ſeated upon a Beach of the Bay. It is built moſtly of Stone, and has a noble Look from the Sea. To the Weſt of the Town ſtands the Caſtle, built on a high and very ſteep Hill, where moſt of the Merchants dwell, and is very near as big as the City below. It is a Biſhop's See, and the Governor is of the Nobility of *Venice*. The chief Commodities they deal in are Wine, Oyl, and Currants, which are eſteem'd of the beſt Growth. They grow on Vines like other Grapes, and are gather'd in *July*, and then pack'd in Hogſheads ready for the Merchants.

Our Men being well pleas'd they were out of Danger, and in a Place where Wine was to be bought cheap, traffick'd ſo much for that Commodity, that moſt of them fell into dangerous Diſeaſes; therefore I reſolv'd to leave *Zant*, and make for *Sapienza*, an Iſland with a good Harbour, not inhabited, where they would not be under the like Temptation; ſo we came to an Anchor there, *Sept.* 8. I order'd twelve Guns on Shore, and rais'd a Platform

Platform capable of defending us from the Insults of an Enemy. In a pleasant Green we put up a large Tent, and others smaller by it, for the Officers and Sailors: But I having but one Bed put up on Shore, *Don Ferdinand* was forc'd to lie with me, tho' as I thought very unwillingly. Our sharing the ready Money took us up four Days; I reserv'd a fourth Part to my Owners, which amounted to upwards of sixty thousand Pound; and a twelfth Part for my self, which, with what Presents and other Things that I had, amounted to the Value of 50000 Pound. Every Sailor from first to last shar'd above twelve hundred Pound a-piece; but when we came to divide the Goods, we knew not which Way to go about it; so with one common Consent of the Sailors, I was oblig'd to accept of them, without paying one Penny for them.

We set sail for *Ostia* the next Day, after we had finish'd our Dividend, and arriv'd there *Nov.* 1. after a Voyage of two Years and seven Months, and the richest Prize that ever came into any Port of *Italy*. I sent a Letter to *Don Antonio*, to give him Notice of my Arrival, and Advice to come and take Care of his Cargo. In two Days, he, *Donna Isabella*, and her little Son came on Board in a Pleasure-Boat. I found they were in Mourning, and I told 'em I was afraid to ask them who it was; for they inform'd me that *Isabella*'s Father had been dead above two Years, but they had resolv'd never to wear any other Colour, till they had seen me. Never was a more tender Meeting between Friends, than between us; and I must confess, for some time all my Cares lay hush'd.

When I came to inform *Don Antonio* of the Wealth I had brought him Home, he stood amaz'd: For besides the Money which I told him of, the Goods I had on Board exceeded in Value the Freight I went out with.

with. I could hardly prevail upon him to accept of such a Sum of Money, till I inform'd him it was but barely his Due, and that I had very near as much to my own Share.

I presented *Don Ferdinand* to *Antonio* and his Lady, who seem'd very much pleas'd with him; and *Don Pedro*, out of his free merry Humour, told me, he hop'd I would not forget him, because he was older, for he thought he had more Right to my Friendship than *Don Ferdinand*, being he was an older Acquaintance. I let 'em into some of his Life and Humour: they receiv'd him very friendly; and we all went to *Don Antonio*'s *Villa* together.

After staying a Week, I began to be tir'd with so much Pleasure, and therefore begg'd Leave of *Don Antonio* to visit *Rome*, only to shew *Don Ferdinand* that celebrated Place. *Don Antonio* sent before to his Palace to prepare for our Reception, and the next Day we follow'd. We visited all the Rarities, ancient and modern, where we might see the Grandeur of the ancient *Romans* by those stupendous Ruins still left. As *Rome* was formerly a Nursery of War and Greatness, it is now a Nursery of Arts, but chiefly Painting, Architecture, and Musick. There have flourish'd in one Century, *Lanfranio*, *Dominichino*, *Pietro du Cortona*, the *Poussine's*, *Camassei*, *Guercin da Cento*, *Chivoli*, *Andrea Sacchi*, the immortal *Raphael*, *Hannibal Carache*, *Guido Reno*, *Mutiano*, and many more excellent in the Art of Painting. Then *Palladio*, *Vitruvius*, *Scamozzi*, *Pezza*, and many more, famous for Architecture. Then the divine *Corelli* for Musick, whose sweet Compositions will be always new; and we may say by him, as a great *English* Poet said of our Countryman *Shakespear*, that the former had pull'd up the Roots of Musick, as the latter of Poetry, and transplanted them into their own

Gar-

Gardens, where all those that follow must borrow a Branch from them.

I shall not say any thing more of *Rome*, nor of *Naples*, where we went once more, upon *Don Ferdinand*'s Account. I would have persuaded him to have begun his Studies at *Rome*, (for I suppos'd him a *Roman Catholick*) but he would not hear of it, and begg'd he might go with me into *England*, which I promis'd him he should.

Donna Isabella had an Orphan Cousin that liv'd with her, of a vast Fortune, beautiful to a Miracle; who having seen *Don Ferdinand*, fell desperately in Love with him, but he did not seem to have the least Regard for her. *Don Antonio* discover'd to me the Secret, and pitying by Experience his Kinswoman, desir'd I would forward the Match. But when *Don Ferdinand* understood my Desires, he fell upon his Knees, and begg'd I would never mention it more; for he had made a solemn Resolution never to marry any Woman breathing. I press'd him all I could, and laid the Folly of such a rash Resolve before him; but it was preaching to a Tempest; and all my Arguments had no Power upon him. On the other hand, the merry *Don Pedro* was as deep in Love with *Donna Felicia*, which was the Name of the Orphan Lady. But his Manner of Courtship was so odd, and out of the way, that he caus'd more Diversion than we could have imagin'd. If she went to Bed, he would lay himself down at her Chamber Door, and sing Songs all Night; that if she had any Inclination to have rested, he was resolv'd, she should not; and he would often say, he intended to plague her into a Compliance. If she went into the Garden, he was sure to follow her close; or even at Church, he would often tell her, it was in vain to pray for a Blessing from Heaven, when she was committing Murder with every Look,

Look. In ſhort, he would often force a Smile from the afflicted Lady herſelf.

I was ſtill endeavouring with *Don Ferdinand* to forget his raſh Vow: But he deſir'd me, in ſuch moving Terms, not to intreat him further, that I reſolv'd never to trouble him any more on that Theme. Notwithſtanding which, I begg'd of *Donna Iſabella* to try what ſhe could do with him, for I imagin'd Complaiſance might work more upon him than Friendſhip. She ſent for him into her Cloſet, and they remain'd together ſeveral Hours; and I was very much pleas'd the next Day to ſee him walking in the Garden, only with *Donna Felicia*. I did not think it proper to interrupt them; but when I had an Opportuni y, I declar'd my Satisfaction, and told him I eaſily forgave his not complying with me, and yielding to the Perſuaſion of *Donna Iſabella*. He ſeem'd in ſome Confuſion at what I ſaid to him, which I attributed to his denying me, and his Condeſcenſion to *Donna Iſabella*. But in a few Days after that, I was ſomething more ſurpris'd to ſee *Don Pedro* eagerly addreſſing *Donna Felicia*, and ſhe regarding him more favourably than uſual. And my Surpriſe was increas'd, when *Donna Iſabella* told me the nuptial Day was fix'd between *Don Pedro* and *Donna Felicia*. I told her I was very well pleaſed the Lady had ſo ſoon forgot her violent Paſſion; but I added that the ſtronger the Flame, the ſhorter the Duration. If ſo, return'd *Donna Iſabella*, we may hope your Paſſion is buried long ſince. I told her, I did not love like others, for I was reſolv'd to carry mine with me to the Grave. By what I have formerly heard (return'd *Donna Iſabella*) from you, as well as my Husband, you have not the leaſt Glimpſe of Hopes. Madam, ſaid I, that is the Reaſon I muſt deſpair; for no other Fire ſhall ever warm my Breaſt, but what was

kindled

kindled there by my firſt Flame. We had much Diſcourſe upon the ſame Subject, and *Donna Iſabella* told me at laſt, I was a Pattern for all faithful Lovers.

When we were at *Naples*, I had provided Goods and Conveniency of ſending to St. *Salvador*, according to my Promiſe given to *Don Jaques*; and the Veſſel being to touch at *Oſtia*, was to ſend to me for my Letters to *Don Jaques*. I deſir'd *Don Ferdinand* to write to his Father; but he begg'd to be excus'd, for fear it ſhould fall into the Hands of his Lady; and for the ſame Reaſon he begg'd I would be cautious how I mention'd him. I told him, he ſhould ſee what I had wrote before I ſent it; which was as follows.

SIR,

I *Know not how to make you Acknowledgments ſufficient for thoſe Favours ſo generouſly conferr'd upon me; and the Manner of doing it ſtamps a double Value on the Obligation. If there is no Way to repay the mighty Debt, yet I ſhall with the utmoſt Gratitude remember* Don Jaques, *and his kind Benefits. I have done my ſelf the Honour to ſend you thoſe things you were deſirous of, the laſt Time I had the Happineſs of converſing with you; which I beg you will accept, only for this Reaſon, that you may ſee you ſhall ever live in the Remembrance of one, who ſhall think it the beſt good Fortune can fall upon him, to ſubſcribe himſelf*

Your ſincere Friend and Servant,

ROBERT BOYLE.

P. S.

P. S. *I alſo beg you to give my humble Duty to your good Lady and virtuous Daughter; and be aſſur'd whatever you have given me in Charge ſhall have the ſame Regard, as if an immortal Spirit had deſcended from above, and written in my Heart your Commiſſion. Whatever Letters you are pleas'd to honour me with, direct for me at the Palace of* Antonio de Alvares *in* Rome, *who will take Care to ſend 'em to me where-ever I am; for as yet I am undetermin'd where to ſettle my ſelf, but I have* England *in View.*

I wrote this Letter in the *Portugueze* Language, and ſhew'd it to *Don Ferdinand*, who approv'd of what I had written.

I had diſpos'd of the reſt of my Goods on Board, and the Money amounted to upwards of fifteen thouſand Pound; but I could not prevail upon *Don Antonio* to accept of one Penny.

No, my dear Friend, ſaid he, you have already brought me the Fortune of a Nobleman; though it is not worldly Wealth I covet. I have all the Earth contains in the Poſſeſſion of my adorable Wife: and even that, my greateſt Happineſs, is owing to you; and all the Allay of Joy I have, is, that I cannot ſee you as bleſt as I am. But, continu'd he, Time that wears out all things, will, I hope, cure this amorous Sickneſs of your Soul. I let him know my Grief was as fix'd as Deſtiny, and I had nothing elſe to do but to wing to the Place where the Joy of my Life did once reſide; with this only Hope, that the lively Imagination of my Loſs would put an End to all my Sorrows, by ſinking me into the Arms of Death.

He was ſo very much concern'd for me that he could not avoid ſhedding Tears; and us'd all the Arguments

guments he could to perſuade me to reſide in *Italy*. I told him I had more Reaſon to go for my native Country than what I had given him, and that was the Education of young *Don Ferdinand*, who begg'd to cultivate his Studies in *England*.

I turn'd all my Money into Bills of Exchange, well knowing the Caſualties that attend Travellers; and I intended to go by Land to *Flanders*, with *Don Ferdinand*, my two faithful *Indians*, and one Servant more.

All my *Spaniſh* Sailors that I had pick'd up by the Way, had by my Conſent their Diſcharge, and were gone to their ſeveral Homes, in Circumſtances beyond their Expectations; though they all declar'd, if I intended another Voyage, they would never forſake me. Some of my *Engliſh* Sailors had married *Italian* Women, and ſo deſign'd to ſettle in *Italy*.

When I deſir'd *Don Antonio* to take Charge of the Ship, he told me he had nothing to do with it, declaring it was mine, and therefore deſir'd I would make no more Words about it; for, ſaid he, you don't know but you may meet with ſomething to change your Mind, and we may have the Satisfaction of ſeeing you once more.

In a few Days after this, the Nuptials were celebrated between *Don Pedro* and *Donna Felicia*, who deſign'd for *Spain* (aſſoon as I left *Italy*) where he intended to take up the Mortgage of his Eſtate, the Time being almoſt expir'd. I muſt own, the Uncertainty of Womens Tempers gave me much Cogitation; and I thought this Marriage was a very odd Thing.

I now began to think of my Journey; but firſt I order'd a Goldſmith to make me every way the ſame Parcel of Plate as I receiv'd as a Preſent from *Don Jaquis de Ramirez*, which I preſented to *Donna Iſabella*,

bella, that ſhe mrght remember me. She gave me many Thanks for it, but ſeem'd very unwilling to accept of it a great while. I told her, as merrily as I could, if ſhe made any more Words about it, I would return her the Ship that bore her Name, and would be no longer under her Command. Well, ſaid ſhe, I'll accept 'em; but as you allow me to be your Owner, I'll give you Orders in Writing, that you muſt not break open till you come in ſuch a Latitude, that is, a Fortnight after you are ſettled in *England*. I promis'd to obey her punctually. The next Day ſhe gave me a ſeal'd Paper, which, ſhe told me, were the Orders ſhe mention'd.

I had given my Lieutenant Charge of the Ship, with Directions to make for *Briſtol* with all the Expedition practicable.

The next Day, being *Feb.* 6, 1696, I took my Leave of all my Acquaintance; and notwithſtanding I am not us'd to weep, could not forbear ſhedding ſome Tears at Parting with ſuch true Friends as *Don Antonio* and his Lady had prov'd. I rode the firſt Day overwhelm'd with Melancholy, and not one Thought of being poſſeſs'd of ſuch a Fortune, from Nothing, in ſo ſhort a Time, ever enter'd my Breaſt. But ſeeing *Don Ferdinand* by his Countenance partake of my Sorrow, I was forc'd to appear much leſs melancholy, to oblige him to be ſo too.

I would have ſhewn him the Rarities of *Italy* in our Travels, but he ſeem'd very little inclin'd to Curioſity: And we arriv'd at *Antwerp* without any Adventure. We ſtaid ſome time there to recover the Fatigue of our Journey, but more upon *Don Ferdinand*'s Account, being he was ſomething indiſpos'd, having never travell'd on Horſeback ſo far before.

As we approach'd the Town, he and my *Indians* were ſurpris'd to ſee the Manner of begging. The Boys and Girls would run before you, and of a ſudden ſtop ſhort, ſtand upon their Heads, and clap their Hands, ſaying their Prayers all the while.

The City of *Antwerp* is finely ſeated upon the River *Scheld*; it is very well fortify'd, and upon the Walls are planted Trees that give an agreeable Shade, and make it pleaſant Walking. The Caſtle, both ſtrong and beautiful, was founded by the Duke of *Alva*. The City in Bigneſs may compare with *Briſtol*; their Streets ſpacious, and Houſes very magnificent. The Church of *Sancta Maria*, their Cathedral, is a ſuperb Building; and of that Neatneſs, that the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, of *Germany*, would often ſay *it was only fit to be kept in a Caſe*. The Inſide is as glorious and neat as the Out. The Paintings were perform'd by Sir *Peter Paul Rubens*, an Inhabitant of *Antwerp*, and are equal to any thing that ever he did. The Jeſuits Church is alſo very beautiful, adorn'd with abundance of curious Marble Pillars, and all the Pannels painted by the ſame Hand as the other. There are ſeveral more beautiful Churches and Chapels; but as theſe mention'd are the chief, we ſhall take no farther Notice of them.

The third of *April*, (having pretty well recover'd our Fatigue by a Reſt of ten Days) we ſet out for *Calais*, being the ſhorteſt Cut to *Dover*, and arriv'd there *April* 6; making ſhort Stages.

From this Place we might behold the white Cliffs of *Dover*. I muſt own I had ſome ſecret Satisfaction in viewing my native Country: and the next Day, early in the Morning, we embark'd, and reach'd the Town by Noon, having a very favourable Paſſage. Here landing, I had like to have loſt one of my *Indians*. Slinging his Horſes into the Boat, he would get upon the Back of one

one of them, thinking he would go out quietly. But just upon the Inſtant, a Veſſel riding by the *Peer* fir'd a Gun, and frighted the Horſe to ſuch a degree, that he plung'd into the Sea, and ſwam from the Shore; and the *Indian* being thrown off with the Start, had his Foot ſo entangled in the Stirrup, that (notwithſtanding his Skill in Swimming) he muſt have inevitably periſh'd, if the other *Indian*, ſeeing the Misfortune, had not plung'd in, and with a Knife cut the String. He then took the Horſe by the Bridle with one Hand, and ſwimming with the other, brought him ſafe to Shore.

Don Ferdinand not being over-pleas'd with riding on Horſe-back, we took the Flying-Coach the next Day, and ſafely arriv'd at *London*. I order'd my *Engliſh* Servant and the two *Indians*, with our Baggage, to make two Days of it; and gave 'em Directions to wait at the Place where the Coach inn'd, till I ſent for 'em.

When we arriv'd at *London*, I did not care to go to any of my Acquaintance, but rather choſe to lie at a *Bagnio* for a Day or two; but I ſent privately for my Uncle's Clerk, that had endeavour'd to prevent my being kidnapp'd by putting a Letter in my Pocket, mention'd in the Beginning of this Relation. He came to me according to my Deſire, but was overjoy'd and ſurpriz'd to ſee me, though he hardly knew me at firſt, for I had not ſent him my Name.

He inform'd me that my Uncle had been dead above a Year, and had left his Eſtate to his eldeſt Son, and his Buſineſs to his youngeſt and him: But they would often talk of me, not believing I was in the Land of the Living; yet they had increas'd my ſmall Eſtate with their utmoſt Care, intending, if ever I came back again, to reſtore it to me. I let him into my whole Hiſtory, and he was very much pleas'd to hear that I had gain'd ſuch a plentiful Fortune. I got him to pro-

vide

vide us convenient Lodgings, and private, for I did not intend to go abroad much; and alſo to go to the Inn to fetch my Servants.

My two *Indians* ſpoke *Engliſh* very well, and I had learnt 'em to write and read; and being in modern Habits, they were not much gaz'd at.

The Time being expir'd that I was to look into my Commiſſion, (as *Donna Iſabella* call'd it) I reſolv'd to break it open, having ſome Curioſity. But it was gone, and notwithſtanding all my Search, I could not gain any Tydings of it. I could not imagine how I ſhould loſe that, and nothing elſe. I muſt own I was very uneaſy, fearing it might be ſomething of Importance I was to do for *Donna Iſabella*; therefore I diſpatch'd a Letter to *Italy*, to tell 'em of my ſafe Arrival, and my Loſs of the Packet, (and to ſend me a freſh one) with Directions where to write to me.

While I ſtaid in Town, I purchas'd an Eſtate of 2000 *l.* a Year in *Somerſetſhire*, and yet had 25000 *l.* left, which I employ'd in the publick Funds. And now I had ſettled my Eſtate, as well as that I had for *Don Ferdinand*, I was willing to forward him in his Studies, and propos'd to ſend him to *Oxford* with a Tutor. But he ſtill begg'd to ſtay a little longer with me.

I therefore took a Reſolution of going to *Briſtol*, only with *Don Ferdinand*, and one Servant, with no other Buſineſs than to ſee the Place where my loſt Treaſure once liv'd.

When we were arriv'd, I enquir'd which was the Houſe that Mr. *Villars*, late Merchant, formerly dwelt in. We ſoon found it out, but were inform'd one Capt. *Kendrick* dwelt there. I was inquiſitive to know if there was any Tydings of one *Suſan*, who was formerly Maid to Mrs. *Villars*, Daughter to the deceas'd Merchant; and at laſt got Information that ſhe liv'd at a Country Houſe near the Sea-ſide.

I

I went immediately away for the Place, tho' near thirty Mile off, and late in the Evening. Before we had rid far, the Skies became gloomy, and a violent Storm threaten'd us, which ſoon overtook us with ſuch Fury, that we were forc'd to put into a little Houſe out of the Road for Shelter. When we came within, we could not ſee any Body in't but a little Child, playing with ſome Toys it had before it; and all we could get out of it was, that *Mamma* would come by and by. It was as lovely a Child as ever I ſaw, and we were ſtill admiring it, when a Man and Woman came in. They were much amaz'd to find us there; but I begg'd their Pardon, and told 'em the Storm drove us in to take Shelter.

The Man told us we were very welcome to ſuch as his Houſe afforded, but he fear'd we ſhould find but poor Accommodation. In ſhort, the Storm kept up in its full Force, and now it grew dark, and we were two Mile from any Inn; and to add to our Diſtreſs, we were Strangers to the Road. The Man ſeeing us ſo put to it, told us he had but two Beds, but we ſhould be welcome to 'em, ſuch as they were.

I told him I would gratify him for his Trouble, and thereupon gave him a Guinea. He was very well pleas'd with my Preſent, and began to ſhew it in his Looks, as well as the Woman. I gave him another, to provide us ſomething to eat, and to take care of the Horſes. He ſaid he had but bad Stable-room, but if I pleas'd he would take my Servant, and all the Horſes, (with one of his own to bring him back again) and leave 'em at an Inn in the neighbouring Village. I agreed to it; and while he was gone I ask'd the good Woman many Queſtions about the Child which we ſaw there, and ſoon found it was none of their own, but a Gentlewoman's, a Stranger to them, and one they had never

ſeen

ſeen but once. Why, ſaid I, how are you paid for the keeping of it? She ſeem'd amaz'd at my Queſtion, and was ſome time before ſhe anſwer'd me; but at laſt ſhe ſaid ſhe was always very well paid.

I finding ſhe did not much care for talking upon that Subject, chang'd the Diſcourſe. Soon after the Man came in, and we went to Supper. I would have had *Don Ferdinand* to have lain with me; but the Man underſtanding we uſually lay aſunder, would give us both the Beds, and they would ſit up. I ask'd them where the Child lay; and they told us in a Cradle. I began to be concerned for the Infant, though without giving any Reaſon. When we had ſupp'd, we went to Bed, and had but little Reſt; and when we roſe in the Morning, (it proving fair and pleaſant) we reſolved to walk to the Inn where our Horſes were, with our Hoſt for our Guide. When we arriv'd, I diſmiſs'd him with another Guinea; and would have got immediately on Horſe-back, but *Don Ferdinand* was ſo very much diſorder'd that he was not able to mount. I was very much concern'd for his Indiſpoſition, and begg'd he would repoſe himſelf there, while I purſu'd my Journey; with a Promiſe to return the next Day, or ſend my Servant for him. He conſented that it ſhould be ſo, and I ſet forward.

Coming to a Place where ſeveral Roads met, I was confounded to know the right, and therefore was ſome time at a Stand, not knowing which to take: But hearing ſeveral Voices in an adjacent Barn, I made up to it on Foot, giving my Horſe to my Man. The nearer I approach'd, the more Noiſe they made; but I could not underſtand 'em. This awaken'd my Curioſity, and I ſtole ſofily to the Barn, where I could obſerve through a Crevice (unſeen) upwards of twenty Gypſies, ſitting in a Huddle, with a Child in the midſt ſtark naked, which

which they were rubbing over with Walnut-Shells; and every time it cry'd they ſet up that confus'd Noiſe. But I was very much ſurpriz'd to find in that Child the Features of that I had ſeen the Night before at my Country Landlord's. I beckon'd my Servant to come near with my Horſes; being arm'd, I made to the Barn Door, and forc'd it open. I ask'd 'em, in an imperious Manner, what they were doing with that Child; and further affirm'd they had ſtole it from ſuch a Place, giving them to underſtand I had People coming to apprehend 'em. Upon hearing this, they all took to their Heels; and ſome (I found) that had come there with Crutches, ran very nimbly away without 'em; but the Child was left behind. I now began to conſider with my ſelf what I had done; and that I had gotten a Child, but did not know what to do with it. They had rubb'd the poor thing all over with the green Walnut-Shells, that made it look like one of their Fraternity. By good Fortune they had left his Clothes behind 'em, as alſo ſome Rags, which I ſuppoſe were to be put on inſtead of the others.

My Man and I dreſs'd it as well as we could, and aukwardly enough; but when we had finiſh'd (notwithſtanding my Haſte) I reſolv'd to go back again, and enquire into this Affair. When we came to the Inn, I gave the Infant to the Care of the Woman of the Houſe till my Return; and underſtanding *Don Ferdinand* was gone to Reſt, I proceeded to my Hoſt's Houſe without diſturbing him. When we arriv'd there, I met the Woman at the Door. Pray, (ſaid I to her) good Woman, where's the Child that I ſaw here laſt Night? Where's the Child? (return'd the Woman ſnappingly) why the Child's in his Cradle aſleep. Let me ſee it; ſaid I. No, ſaid ſhe, I won't diſturb it for you, nor no one elſe. I told her peremptorily I would ſee it that Inſtant,

Inſtant, in ſpight of her, for I fear'd ſome foul Play. She ſeeing me reſolute, and lighting from my Horſe: Well Sir, ſeeing you are ſo deſirous (ſaid ſhe) I'll go and bring it to you. When ſhe was gone, I began to imagine my ſelf miſtaken, and that Children might be very like, without being the ſame; but I knew a Guinea would ſoon reconcile her to my Rudeneſs. I ſtaid waiting a conſiderable time, taken up with ſeveral Thoughts, and not obſerving how long I had waited, till my Man told me the old Woman was long a coming. I began to call, and no body anſwering, I order'd him to go in, and ſee for her. He came out again, and told me ſhe was not in the Houſe, nor any one elſe; but that he believ'd ſhe had ſlip'd out of the back Door, and got away through the Garden. I began to think there was ſomething very extraordinary in the Adventure of the Child, and reſolv'd to be ſtrict in the Examination. I enter'd the Houſe my ſelf, and ſearch'd, but to no Purpoſe. I ſent my Man in the mean time in purſuit of the Woman. But he return'd without her. There was never a Neighbouring-houſe to enquire, no nearer than the Village where I had left the Child. So I had juſt got on Horſeback in order to go back, when I perceiv'd the Man coming towards his own Houſe. I ſpurr'd on to meet him, and he ſeem'd much concern'd; I ſeiz'd him by the Collar, and told him, I came to ſecure him, for the Murder of the Child I ſaw at his Houſe laſt Night. The Man was in ſuch a terrible Fright at what I ſaid, that he was more dead than alive. Sure Sir, ſaid he, it can't be, it is not murder'd. I bid him produce it, or he ſhould be try'd for it. In ſhort, I frighted the poor Fellow ſo much, that he told me, if I would have a little Patience, he would tell me all that he knew concerning it (ſtill crying, I hope it is not murder'd.) I told him the Child was ſafe. We went back to his

Houſe,

Houſe, where after the Fellow had a little compos'd himſelf, he made me the following Relation.

About three Years ago, a Gentlewoman came to my Wife, and made a Bargain with her to keep this Infant, and by paying us handſomely, we imagin'd it belong'd to ſome Perſon of Diſtinction; for we receiv'd ten Pounds every Quarter, and that before it was due. The Lady would often take the Child for a Day or two, and return it again. My Wife, being a worldly Woman, laid ſeveral Plots how to know the Truth of the Child, but to no Purpoſe; but by all Circumſtances we believ'd the Parents did not care for owning it. One Day my Wife told me ſhe had a Deſign in her Head, but ſhe would not diſcloſe it, till ſhe could be ſure of ſucceeding; and when the Lady came the next time to take the Child away for a Day as uſual, my Wife was in Conference with her for ſome time. And when ſhe was gone, ſhe told me that ſhe had prevail'd upon the Lady to pay her one hundred Pounds before hand, and that ſhe brought her to it, by telling her we ſhould make a Purchaſe of the Houſe we live in. In ſhort, my Wife (who wears the Breeches) made me conſent to carry on the Deceit; and the next Day the Lady brought the Child, and the hundred Pound and gave it my Wife, without any thing under my Hand, and left us in a ſmall time after. When ſhe was gone, my Wife diſcours'd me after this manner.

"Husband, we have now one hundred and fifty Pounds (for we had been very ſaving) beſides our Goods, and Cattle, which will fetch us one hundred more. With this Money we may go into my Country (which was the *Iſle of Man*) and live contentedly all our Lives, without any Fears of bad Crops, and ill Markets. Well, but ſaid I, what will become of the Child? I quickly found by her Expreſſions that ſhe reſolv'd to murder it.

I

I was ſtruck with Horror at her Propoſition, and notwithſtanding her violent Temper, oppos'd her in't; and told her, upon no Conditions would I conſent to do ſo barbarous a Deed. I found her ſo fix'd upon the Deſign of Murder, that I was at laſt, as the lighteſt Evil, obliged to conſent to her ſelling it to a Company of *Gypſies*; but with the greateſt Reluctance in the World; which was executed this Morning. But we had diſpos'd of every thing before hand, with Intention to have gone for *Briſtol* two Days hence; for we were aſſur'd the Lady would not come again for ſome time.

When he had done, I inform'd him how I came to meet with the Child. I then began to examine if he did not know where the Lady liv'd; and at laſt he confeſs'd he dogg'd her to her Houſe one Day, ſet on by his Wife, but would never diſcover it to her, for fear of her playing ſome Trick. I prevail'd with him to go with me, and ſhew me the Houſe, with the Promiſe of a Reward, and letting him go afterwards. We ſet out (after he had got a Horſe) and in two Hours arriv'd at a pleaſant Houſe, ſurrounded by a ſmall River, and almoſt cover'd with Trees. I ſtopp'd ſome time to view it, and through a little Avenue ſaw two Women gathering Flowers; one had her Face turn'd towards us, which the Man ſaid was the Woman that us'd to come to ſee the Child, and that was the Place ſhe carry'd it to. I order'd my Man to take the Horſes to the next Town, about half a Mile off, and come to me again. But I needed not have bid mine Hoſt to have gone about his Buſineſs; for he being fearful of the Event, got away without our perceiving it.

When my Man was gone, I walk'd about to view the Houſe, but I had loſt ſight of the Women, and it began to rain again. I ſtood up for Shelter from the Weather under a large Oak; and had but juſt got

there, when a Woman came out of the Gate, with her Miſtreſs's Service, to invite me in. I was very well pleas'd with the Invitation, and went into the Houſe, where I was met by the Gentlewoman, a very handſome Lady. She told me, as I look'd like a Gentleman, ſhe deſir'd I would take Shelter there till the Storm was over. I return'd her the Thanks her Civility deſerv'd, and we ſat down, but were immediately interrupted with ringing at the Gate; and I perceiv'd, through a ſmall Window, a Gentleman in a Scarlet-cloak a-light from his Horſe, and go in quite through the Houſe. The Lady begg'd my Pardon, and told me, ſhe was obliged to keep another Lady Company while that Perſon was there, but would wait on me aſſoon as poſſible again. As my Curioſity had brought me there, I had no Thoughts of going away till I had ſatisfy'd it in ſome meaſure. I could hear the Man's Voice very plain, who ſeem'd to threaten a Lady with a great many Hardſhips as to her Fortune, if ſhe would not conſent to his Love. The Lady anſwer'd in ſo low a Voice that I could not hear what ſhe ſaid, but I found her Anſwers did but inrage him the more. They talk'd a great while, and at laſt they ſeem'd to be ſilent. I hearing the Door open, ſtep'd back into the Room where the Lady left me. She came to me again, and ſat down. I hope, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) you'll pardon my Rudeneſs, but I could not wait on you before. Madam, (return'd I) I ought to beg your Pardon for taking Poſſeſſion of your Houſe here, who am an utter Stranger to you. We were interrupted in our Compliments, by the Voice of a Perſon that ſcream'd out Murder! Murder!—— We both ran out, and ſhe coming to the Door where the Noiſe was, we found it ſhut, and the Voice ſtill calling out for Help. I burſt it open with my Foot, and, with my Sword in my Hand, ran into the

the Room, where I found the Gentleman that came in the Cloak, endeavouring to force a Lady. I gave him a Stroke upon the Head, and bid him turn about and defend himſelf; which he did, with many bitter Exclamations. But after ſeveral Paſſes, I had the good Fortune to diſarm him; and he having receiv'd ſeveral Wounds, drop'd down with Loſs of Blood. The Lady he had attempted, was ſtill in a Swoon; and the Buſtle had brought ſeveral Women-Servants into the Room. I retir'd into the Chamber I came from, but deſir'd the Lady to take ſome Care of the Wretch, who deſerv'd Death; but I wiſh'd might ſurvive, to prevent farther Trouble. She took my Advice, and ſent to the next Town for a Surgeon, who ſoon came, and my Man along with him by Accident. Perceiving his Wounds were not dangerous, (for I ſtood by while the Surgeon dreſs'd him) and finding the Houſe in too much Confuſion to be better inform'd concerning the Child, I was about to take my Leave. But the Lady I had ſo timely reſcu'd, having recover'd her Fright, deſir'd ſhe might thank me for ſo great a Providence. I was eaſily perſuaded to ſtay, and immediately a Lady came into the Room. But, good God! what Tranſports did I feel, when in that Lady, I beheld every Feature of my dear Mrs. *Villars*. Our Eyes were fix'd upon each other, and the Sight of me rais'd ſuch a tumult of Joy in her Breaſt, that combating with her unſettled Heart, ſhe fell down in a Swoon again. The other Lady at firſt knew not the Meaning of our Diſorder: But when I call'd her my dear Wife, and other extravagant Expreſſions of my Love, ſhe ſoon gueſs'd the Truth, and ſeem'd as much tranſported as we were. Words would but wrong the Sentiments we felt for each other. Therefore, let the Reader (if poſſible) gueſs the Joy of two Lovers meeting, after imagining each other

no longer in this World. We thought it was all a Dream; but at laſt being convinc'd of the Reality, we ſent privately for the Parſon, and were ty'd by the outward Ceremony of the Church, whoſe Hearts had been divinely united long before; and that Night I took once more Poſſeſſion of what I valu'd above all the World could give.

The next Day, I ſent for *Don Ferdinand* to partake in our Joy, but was inform'd his Indiſpoſition had increas'd upon him ſo much, that it was dangerous to remove him. This was ſome Allay to our Joy, for I had a real Friendſhip for him. I told my dear Wife, the Obligation I had to his Father. I now deſir'd to know the Particulars of her wonderful Eſcape, which ſhe related to me after the following manner.

You know, ſaid ſhe, when we parted at *Mequinez*, our Hearts foreboded ſomething would follow prejudicial to our Loves. I was not acquainted with *Muſtapha*'s Eſcape; if I had, it is very probable I might have avoided the Misfortune that befell me: But he got a Veſſel to carry him to *Sallee*, (as he inform'd me, when I was their Priſoner again) and by the Way, met with his Maſter *Hamet*; who wrote a Letter to the Governor of *Mammora*, and ſent *Muſtapha* with it, while he intended to wait near the Coaſt to guard us back. When they had ſeiz'd me, they hurry'd me away immediately on board a Veſſel, and ſail'd upon the Inſtant; and before Night met with *Hamet*, where I was carry'd on Board. He upbraided me in Terms, that gave me to expect worſe Treatment from him; but I told him, rather than ſubmit to his naſeous Love, I would ſtarve my ſelf to Death, if I could find no other means to rid me of Life. The next Day a Storm ariſing of a ſudden, blew down one of their Maſts, and drove 'em back again, within Sight of the Port of *Mammora*;

Mammora; but to avoid it, they ran beyond it, and the Storm continu'd. In the Evening it began to abate, and he ſteer'd his Courſe back again; but before it was dark a Ship appear'd in View. And notwithſtanding he had loſt ſeveral Men in a former Engagement, he reſolv'd to ſet upon this Veſſel; and it growing Calm he got up to her with rowing. The other Veſſel knowing what ſhe was, began with us firſt, and fir'd very briskly.

The Fight continu'd about an Hour, as near as I could gueſs; for all my Employment was to pray, that ſome lucky Shot would end that Life, which was ſo burthenſome to me. When the Noiſe of the Ordnance ceas'd, I had not Curioſity enough to go to ſee how Affairs ſtood. But judge my Surprize and Pleaſure, when I tell you the firſt Man that enter'd the Cabin, was the Mate that I had made Captain, as I mention'd to you in the Relation of my firſt Misfortune.

How Madam! cry'd he, is it you! thank Heav'n my Voyage is at an End. Come Madam, (continu'd he) I'll carry you to one that thinks her Life a Burden till you are ſafe, being your Danger is owing to her. I had not Power to return him an Anſwer, or ask him who it was he meant, I was ſo confounded with Thought. He carry'd me on board of his own Ship, where he brought Mrs. *Suſan* to me. My Heart was ſo full of Content, that for a Moment you had ſlipt out of my Memory.

The Ship of *Hamet*'s was juſt ſinking, for they had ſhot her between Wind and Water, and could not come to ſtop it. They had taken out as many of their Goods as the time would permit, and all the Men that were wounded (before ſhe Sunk). I let 'em into your Story, and the mutual Affection we had; and in Return the Captain gave me the following Account of their getting away from *Salle*.

You know, Madam, (ſaid he) the *Moors* were not very ſtrict in ſearching us; and I had at the firſt Sight of 'em (judging what they were) ſecur'd all the Merchants Money deſign'd for Trade, as well as what I had of my own, about my Cloaths, and in a great Fur Cap, which I wore upon my Head.

Hamet being ſatisfy'd with you, and what he found beſides, would not ſell us for Slaves, but gave us the Liberty of walking about the Town, with a ſmall Allowance of Proviſion, till we could ſend a Perſon to *England* for a thouſand Pounds, which was the Ranſom of both Ship and Men. In a little time, I became acquainted with one of the *Jews* of *Salle*, whom I prevail'd upon by the force of Money to buy the Ship, and pay for our Ranſom; which he did, without any one's concerning themſelves about it. We did all we could to find you out, but to no purpoſe; ſo we were obliged to ſet Sail for *England*.

In our Voyage home, Mrs. *Suſan* inform'd me with your Story, not concealing even her own Part in't; and I found her ſo ſincere in her Repentance, that I could not help pitying her, which ſoon roſe a ſofter Paſſion; and aſſoon as we arriv'd in *England*, the Ceremony of the Church compleated my Happineſs. We acquainted Mr. *Kendrick*, your Ladyſhip's Guardian and Steward, with your Misfortune; who, with the Advice of us, fitted the Ship out in your Name, with a ſufficient Quantity of Money for your Ranſom, if it were poſſible for us to hear of you; and by meeting with you now, we have compaſs'd what we intended. I return'd them many Thanks, (eſpecially Mrs. *Suſan*, who would accompany her Husband, in hopes to meet with me.) I deſir'd Captain *Morrice*, (which is the Name of Mrs. *Suſan*'s Husband) to ſteer towards *Mammora*, but he told me it was not ſafe: For

as

as there was a War proclaim'd between *France* and *England*, the Ambaſſador could not anſwer it if he did not make us Prize; and we were further inform'd by one of the *Renegado* Priſoners, that he was very well aſſur'd they were ſail'd for *France*.

Upon this Notice we directed our Courſe, with this Hope, that you would ſoon arrive in *England*, and find me out; for I remember'd in the Story of my Misfortunes, I gave you Marks enough to let you know where I was to be found. Before we made the *Engliſh* Coaſt, I found my ſelf with Child, and the very Imagination had like to have coſt me my Life, for fear the Father of the unborn Infant would not come time enough to ſave my Credit; for though I was well aſſur'd of your Honour, yet I knew the cenſuring World would be apt to blame my Conduct. I could hide nothing from the faithful *Suſan*, who join'd her Fears with mine.

When we came into *Briſtol* Channel, I conſulted with *Suſan* about my Management, and I at laſt reſolv'd to live Private, till I could hear ſome News of you. But I was obliged to let Mr. *Kendrick* my Steward into the Knowledge of my Arrival, tho' he was a Stranger to my Condition.

I ſent to *London*, in hopes of hearing ſome News of you; but having kept the Name of your Uncle a Secret in your Relation, our Endeavours prov'd fruitleſs.

My Melancholy encreas'd with my Condition; and for fear of a Diſcovery, I went into *Wales*, with a Relation of Mrs. *Suſan*'s, and was deliver'd of a Boy, that prov'd the greateſt Comfort to my ſinking Heart; for in his Face was every Feature of his dear Father. I brought him back again here, and had him put to Nurſe, as a Child to a Relation of Mrs. *Suſan*'s, and

had reſolv'd but this very Day to have ſent for him home, that I might always have the Satisfaction of having him in my Sight.

My Steward, finding I was under a Neceſſity of living Private, began to talk to me of Love; and often proceeded ſo far (after finding I diſdain'd his Paſſion) to tell me, if I would not conſent to make him my Husband, he would take care my Eſtate ſhould come into his Hands. Though I could have ſoon broke his Deſigns as to my Fortune, yet my ſolitary Dwelling pleas'd me ſo well, that I gave him good Words, which did but more encourage his Inſolence, till it arriv'd to that Pitch you ſo happily deliver'd me from.

I ſoon found, by my Wife's Relation, that the Infant I had ſo marvellouſly ſav'd, was our own Child. When I related the Accident of meeting with the Child, my Wife expreſs'd ſo much Fear, Terror, Tenderneſs and Joy, that I thought the different Paſſions would have taken away her Underſtanding. By this we may learn, there is a ruling Providence that regulates every Action of our Lives, when they tend to Virtue.

Mr. *Kendrick*, (the Perſon that made the Attempt upon my Wife) was ſoon inform'd of our happy Meeting; and his Wounds mending every Day, he begg'd we would favour him with a Viſit, (which we comply'd with) where he ask'd Pardon for all paſt Offences in ſuch a ſincere Manner, that we were eaſily prevail'd upon to forgive him.

He ſent for all the Books of Accounts and Writings, that belong'd to my Wife's Eſtate, and deliver'd them up to us.

The ſame Day Captain *Morrice* arriv'd from *France*; where he went by the Deſire of my Wife, as her laſt Hope, to know if he could gain any Intelligence of me.

He

He was so very diligent in his Commission, that he got to the Speech of Monsieur *de St. Olon*, who inform'd him of my pursuing the Vessel, and returning, and of my Voyage to *Italy*. I rewarded him by several handsome Presents for his Trouble, and found in all his Actions, a downright blunt sincere Honesty, which drew me into a Friendship for him. I now began to think of *Don Ferdinand*'s Illness, and resolv'd to go with my Wife to make him a Visit; and my dear Wife was so impatient to embrace the Child, she would not let me stay to finish my Affairs with Mr. *Kendrick*.

As we were upon our Journey, we were met by a Relation of mine, Son to that barbarous Uncle that had Kidnap'd me. He was in the Country when I arriv'd at *London*. Notwithstanding the Injury I had suffer'd from his Father, I could not help receiving him with the utmost Affection; for we were both of an Age, and very like as to our Persons, being brought up together till the Death of my Father, which created a Friendship for each other.

He brought me a Packet from *Italy*, and in it one inclos'd from *Don Jaques*, sent from St. *Salvador*. I broke open that first, which was as follows.

I Hope the Distance of Climates has had no Force upon your Friendship; mine here has rather receiv'd an Addition, tho' I am overwhelm'd with a very great Misfortune. My Daughter (in whom all my Hopes center'd) is (I fear) intirely lost; for the very Day you left us, was the last time my Eyes beheld her. We have some reason to fear the Relations of the Person who dy'd by your Sword, have us'd some clandestine Means and perhaps have privately murder'd her, to be reveng'd on us for that Accident, tho' of their own seeking. In short,

I am weary of the hateful Place, and ſhall do my Endeavour to ſeek Repoſe in ſome other Part of the World; and relying upon your good-natur'd Friendſhip, I hope to have the Honour very ſhortly after your receiving this, to embrace you in England, *for I am preparing to leave St.* Salvador *with the ſooneſt. I receiv'd your obliging Letter, and the Bales of Goods, all in good Condition. But there is ſomething Dark in it, or at leaſt my Underſtanding can't reach this Paragraph*; and be aſſur'd, whatever you gave me in Charge, *&c. I ſent you nothing but what I hope you will accept as your own; and I took the manner of leaving 'em with you, knowing your generous Temper would not have been eaſily perſuaded to have accepted them, from one that ſhall ever ſubſcribe himſelf,*

Your ſincere Friend and Servant,

Jaques de Ramirez.

P. S. *My Wife (who is inconſolable) throws in her Love and Service; and all the Hopes ſhe has left, is the Expectation of telling you Face to Face, the Grief ſhe lies under at her fatal Loſs; and to bring us farther in your Debt, we beg you will leave us ſufficient Direction among our Countrymen at your* Exchange, *where we may find you.*

I was very much concern'd at my Friend's Misfortune, eſpecially in believing I was in ſome ſort the miſtaken Cauſe of it. I had inform'd my Wife of the Adventure before, and ſhe condol'd with me; and the Thoughts of being ſo near the ſame Diſtreſs in her own Child, redoubled her Grief. When we had given up ſome time to thoſe Melancholy Reflections, I broke

I broke open the following Letter from *Don Antonio.*

My Dear Friend,

WE received yours with the utmoſt Tranſports; but as I am an Italian, *I ought to be jealous at the Joy my Wife expreſs'd when ſhe read it; and much more when ſhe now declares that ſhe will come to* England, *to reproach you for the little Care you took of her Commiſſion. She will (farther to encreaſe my Jealouſy) write you her Sentiments her ſelf; but let her ſay what ſhe will there, I am reſolv'd to eſteem you as the only Friend that's dear to*

Antonio de Alvares.

The other Letter from *Iſabella* contain'd theſe Words.

SIR,

I'LL ſuſpend my Reproaches till I ſee you, (which I hope will be ſoon.) I had no Commiſſion to be executed in thoſe Papers you loſt, but that of having clear'd the Aſperſion you caſt on our Sex of Inconſtancy, which you had ſome Grounds for, in the ſudden Marriage of Don Pedro *and* Donna Felicia, *after her violent Paſſion for* Don Ferdinand. *When I found the Cauſe of her Diſtemper, I (as having felt the keeneſt Dart of Love) pity'd her Pain, and therefore tax'd* Don Ferdinand *often with his wearing an obdurate Heart in his Boſom. I preſs'd him ſo often, that he deſir'd to meet* Donna Felicia *and my ſelf in my Cloſet. We came according to Appointment, where he ſpoke to this Effect:* Madam, tax me no more with Hardneſs of Heart, for if I had not a very tender one, I had never arriv'd here;

here; and to diſcover my Frailty at once, know, I am a Woman: *And upon that uncovering her Boſom, gave us Evident Tokens. We were both ſo very much ſurpriz'd, that ſhe went on with her Diſcourſe*; I beg, Ladies, you will never open your Mouth to my Captain concerning this; for the Moment I am ſenſible he knows my Weakneſs, ſhall be the laſt of my Life. *But notwithſtanding this Injunction, I can't help informing you, in Pity to her; and I am well aſſur'd, (as your Paſſion is hopeleſs) you have Humanity enough not to deſtroy one who dies for you; and nothing in this World can equal my Joy, if I find, when I arrive,* Don Ferdinand *the Wife to one who ſhall ever have the Friendſhip of*

Iſabella de Alvares.

What Words can expreſs the Amazement I felt, at the reading this laſt Letter! My Thoughts were confounded in Thought, and a Chaos of Ideas poſſeſs'd my Brain. I was in ſo much Confuſion, that I thought of returning home again, to conſider of this ſtrange Turn. Recollected Circumſtances convinc'd me, how blind I was in not diſcovering it ſooner. My Soul was immediately fill'd with the moſt tender Pity; and I had not the uſe of Words to declare my Sentiments to my Wife and Couſin. Sometimes I would imagine it was all a fictitious Dream; yet at laſt I was not diſpleas'd, that I had it in my Power to reſtore to *Don Jaques* his long-loſt Daughter. My Wife was as much concern'd as I was, and my Couſin could hardly believe it. I ſoon found that ſhe had taken care the Packet ſhould not fall into my Hands; and that convinc'd me ſhe would not have her Diſguiſe diſcover'd. The next Day we reſolv'd to viſit her, and form my Reſolution from my Obſervation.

When

When we arriv'd at the Inn, we found her dreſs'd at a Table, with Paper, Pens and Ink before her, but very weak. I preſented my Wife and Couſin to her. She ſaluted them, and ſeem'd mightily pleas'd with my good Fortune, and was very much concern'd her Indiſpoſition would not admit her waiting on me, to partake in my Contentment. Her Weakneſs was ſo prevalent, that ſhe could hardly utter her Words. She knew nothing of receiving the Packet from my Couſin, but after we had ſat ſome time, I gave her the Letter from her Father; which, aſſoon as ſhe had read, ſhe fell backward upon the Bed in a Swoon.

The Noiſe we made at this Accident brought ſeveral People into the Room; and among the reſt my Landlady, who it ſeems had fell deſperately in Love with her, as imagining her to be a Man. She made ſuch aukward Complainings, that if our Minds had been at eaſe, would have produc'd much Mirth; but among her Actions, ſhe unbutton'd her Cloaths, to give her Breath, and ſoon diſcover'd her Miſtake in the Object of her Wiſhes. When ſhe found by her Breaſts that ſhe was a Woman, ſhe ran down Stairs with the utmoſt Precipitation, and left us alone to recover her. When we had brought her to her Senſes again, ſhe ſoon found that we had diſcover'd her Sex; and the Grief and Shame at the Accident had like to have thrown her again into her Swooning. It was ſome time before we could bring her to her ſelf: But, ſhe found by my Diſcourſe, that I underſtood the whole Secret.

After a long Pauſe, ſaid ſhe, I did not intend to let my Frailty be known to you till after my Death; but ſince it is diſcover'd, I beg you will have ſome Regard to my Memory, and I ſhall die contented. I begg'd her not to talk of Death, but live to comfort her griev'd Parents. It is too late, ſaid ſhe, to talk of any Comfort, for

for I have call'd my greateſt Friend, Death, to my Aid, who is juſt now arriv'd. Upon uttering theſe Words, a deadly Paleneſs poſſeſs'd her Face, and Trembling ſeiz'd her Limbs: She had juſt Strength enough to declare to us that ſhe had taken a Doſe of Poiſon, provided for the Occaſion, bought of an Apothecary of the Town; and that ſhe was juſt going to write a Letter to me, but was prevented by our ſudden Appearance, whoſe Contents were only to ſee her ſecretly bury'd, and if poſſible to have conceal'd her Sex and Story from the World. She had hardly made an End, before her Speech forſook her, and Life in all Appearance fled the beauteous Dwelling. My Wife was not preſent at this Accident, being her eager Deſire had carry'd her to her Child; but ſhe came in before it was over. My Couſin ſeem'd more oppreſs'd with Grief than any of us, for Love had taken full Poſſeſſion of his Heart.

While Sorrow had lock'd up all our Tongues, the Apothecary came in, in a ſtrange Confuſion; for the Report had ſoon diſpers'd it ſelf all over that little Village. Sir, ſaid he to me, don't be concern'd at the Condition you ſee the Gentleman in, for he is not dead, he has only took a ſleeping Potion. I partly gueſs'd his Deſign, when he apply'd to me for Poiſon; and the extraordinary Price he paid for it, convinc'd me it was for ſome ſiniſter Deſign; and therefore I happily impos'd upon him.

This News reviv'd us all again, eſpecially my Couſin, who I thought would have gone diſtracted for Joy; and to ſee his impatient watching for her Life's return, (if we may call it ſo) only gave me further Proof, that one Look is ſufficient to fix Love for ever in the Soul. The Apothecary, during this interval of Life and Death, pour'd Cordials into her Mouth to help the Operation; and at laſt ſhe open'd her unwilling

willing Eyes, and gaz'd around her, as if ſhe had been in another World: But we ſoon convinc'd her of the Apothecary's Deceit, at which ſhe ſeem'd in the utmoſt Confuſion, and gave us to underſtand that Life was forc'd upon her againſt her Inclination, and ſhe would ſhake it off.

We gave her all the Comfort we were capable of; and my Wife told her if ſhe talk'd any longer of Death, it was only that ſhe could not bear to ſee us happy. This as it were rous'd her from her Lethargy. Well then, ſaid ſhe, I will live, if it be only to convince you, that I am pleas'd to ſee my Captain bleſs'd (for ſhe would always call me ſo.) After we had a little compos'd her, we left her with my Couſin, to look after our Child, who was in the ſame Place; which had prov'd the ſecret Inſtinct of Nature; for at the firſt Sight in the Houſe of his unnatural Nurſe, I could not help feeling a tender Regard for him. When we had ſatisfy'd our Inn, we prevail'd upon *Donna Bianca* (now no longer *Ferdinand*) to come into the Coach with us, and we arriv'd that Evening at *Briſtol*; where we took Poſſeſſion of the Houſe (which Captain *Kendrick* had liv'd in) that belong'd to my Wife. We ſtaid ſome time there to ſettle my Wife's Affairs, and as much to recover *Donna Bianca*'s Indiſpoſition.

My Couſin by his Aſſiduity gain'd very much of her Eſteem, but ſhe freely declar'd ſhe had no Room in her Heart for Love: But notwithſtanding, with much Importunity, we prevail'd upon her to accept him for a Husband; and her Eſteem ſoon came up to a more tender Paſſion. Aſſoon as the Ceremony was over, we took a Journey to *London* to ſettle our Affairs there, and provide for my expected Gueſts.

One Morning as we were purſuing our Journey, coming near the Skirts of a Wood, we heard ſeveral Groans,

Groans, which alarm'd us; but as we had too many People about us arm'd, to fear any thing, we came out of the Coach to know the Reaſon: Where we found a Woman weltring in Blood, being ſtabb'd in ſeveral Places with a Sword. When I came to take a nearer View, I found it was my former Maſter (the Watch-maker's) Wife. I could not help having Compaſſion for any Perſon in that Condition, therefore order'd her to be taken up and put in the Coach. *Donna Bianca* open'd her Breaſt, and ſtopp'd her Wounds as well as ſhe could, till we could get a Surgeon that I had order'd to be ſent for. She ſoon knew me, and cry'd out, Sure Heaven has ſent you that know my Guilt to be Witneſs of my Repentance: The Wrongs I have done my Husband have purſu'd me to my Grave. When I had robb'd him of all I could lay my Hands on, I made my Eſcape to *Ireland*, chang'd my Name, and ſet up for a greater Fortune than I really was. I had many Suitors, but Heaven, to puniſh me, made me place my Affections on a Perſon that courted me for my Money: And tho' I ſoon underſtood he had but very little Eſtate, yet Love prevail'd with me to make him my Husband. He ſoon ſpent both his own and my Fortune, and by contracting many Debts was forc'd to fly for *England*; and finding no Relief, took to the Highway, where he has committed many Robberies. He lodg'd me in a neighbouring Village; but our Place of Meeting was generally in this Wood, for fear of a Diſcovery. This Morning he came, according to Appointment, where he began his Diſcourſe after this Manner. I had no Inclination for you when I firſt marry'd you, but now I utterly abhor you, therefore am reſolv'd to part with you: But I have another Reaſon beſides my Hatred to you, which is this; I have it in my Power to marry an old Woman, very rich; and therefore it is neceſſary

to

to ſend you out of the World, for fear our Marriage ſhould come to her Ears, and ſpoil my Fortune. He follow'd his Diſcourſe with theſe Wounds, which he gave me, and rode into the Wood, without my once offering to open my Mouth; for Aſtoniſhment had ty'd up my Tongue. I told her, I hop'd Heaven had given her all its Puniſhment in this World. That's all the Hope I have, ſaid ſhe, and in my unfeigned Repentance; for I feel Death approaching. We obſerv'd ſhe was juſt expiring; and before the Surgeon came, ſhe gave up her laſt Breath, calling upon Heaven for Mercy. I gave Orders for her Funeral, and ſent after her Murderer, but to no Purpoſe. But I heard he was taken for the Highway, ſome time after, and executed at *Worceſter*; where he confeſs'd the Murder of his Wife. Thus we ſee the Hand of Heaven, though ſlow in Puniſhments, yet always overtakes the Guilty. When I had given Directions for her Funeral, we purſu'd our Journey, and arriv'd ſafe at *London*.

Don Antonio and his Lady arriv'd firſt, in a private Capacity; not caring to make a Show according to their Birth, to be taken Notice of. And in a few Days after came *Don Jaques* and his Lady, in a Ship of their own, in Company with the *Iſabella* which my Lieutenant commanded, that had ſprung a Leak which oblig'd her to put into *Lisbon* to refit, where *Don Jaques* joyfully met with her.

I had deſir'd *Donna Bianca* once more to put on her Boy's Cloaths; for I intended agreeably to ſurprize her Parents.

I was oblig'd to take Lodgings for *Don Jaques*'s Family, being they intended to take a convenient Houſe in the City. Aſſoon as mutual Careſſes were over, Grief again took Poſſeſſion of their Souls for the Loſs of their Child. After condoling with 'em ſome time, I begg'd

begg'd them to hope for the beſt, and that it was poſſible to hear of her again. They ſhook their Heads, and told me that Thought was long given over, and they had no Hope but in Time to wear away their unhappy Loſs.

I told 'em I had a Kinſman, as much as I could remember the Features of their beautiful Daughter, as like her as a Man could be like a Woman. They expreſs'd a great Deſire to ſee him. I told 'em I had invited him with another Relation to ſup with us on purpoſe. We had taken care before, that *Donna Bianca* ſhould Ombre her Face, and ſpeak nothing but *Engliſh*, on purpoſe to carry on the Deceit. 'Till the time of their coming, we ſpent in relating our Accidents in the Voyage. I told 'em how much I was ſurpriz'd at the Likeneſs of my Couſin to their Daughter: for I had given 'em to underſtand it was a Relation I had never ſeen before I left *England*: which was Truth.

When the Time I had appointed came, *Donna Bianca* and my Couſin enter'd. I preſented them to *Don Jaques* and his Wife, as my Relations, and they ſaluted 'em as utter Strangers. But when they ſaw and heard *Donna Bianca*, they burſt into Tears at the great Reſemblance in both Voice and Features, as they ſaid, to their Daughter. She carry'd it on as long as ſhe could, ſpeaking *Engliſh* all the while; but at laſt their Tears prevail'd ſo much upon her Tenderneſs, that ſhe begg'd leave to retire, but would return immediately. I made an Apology for my Kinſman to *Don Jaques* and his Wife, and told 'em he would return in a very little time. The Space of their Abſence was fill'd with Sighs and Tears; and as I knew their Grief would ſoon be over, I never attempted to comfort 'em.

When

When they were ready, they ſent a Servant to tell me a Gentleman wanted to ſpeak with me. I retir'd, came in again immediately, and told 'em our Company would be encreas'd, for another Relation and his Wife were juſt coming in to ſup with us; and upon the Inſtant my Couſin enter'd, leading by the Hand *Donna Bianca*. They both ran and kneel'd down before *Don Jaques* and his Wife. At the Sight of their Daughter, the Mother fell backward in the Chair in a Swoon; and *Don Jaques* was in ſuch a Surprize that he could not open his Mouth, but expreſs'd his Joy by Tears, Kiſſes, and Embraces; and his Lady coming to her ſelf, had like to have ſtifled her with her Tranſports.

They did not ask any reaſonable Queſtions till the Torrent of their Joy was poured out. After the firſt Tranſports were over, *Donna Bianca* told her own Story. She ſaid, the firſt time I din'd at their Houſe in St. *Salvador*, Love flew into her Heart; and knowing the Modeſty due to her Sex, ſhe was reſolv'd never to diſcover it till ſhe found the State of mine: Yet finding her Paſſion daily increaſe, and underſtanding the Day of my Departure, ſhe procured ſecretly the Habit of a Man, with all other Neceſſaries, and convey'd herſelf on Board in the Boat that carry'd the Preſents her Father had ſent me; and counterfeited the Letter ſhe gave me as from her Father. Every thing anſwered my Wiſh, ſaid ſhe; but I ſoon found my Captain had no Heart to beſtow. It is needleſs to tell how many bitter Sighs and Tears that Knowledge coſt me: But it is now buried in Oblivion. Then ſhe proceeded to beg their Pardon for her raſh Folly, as ſhe call'd it; and they were too much overjoy'd not to forgive her every thing; and they expreſt a great deal of Satisfaction in that they could

now

now call me their Relation. We liv'd in all the Contentment imaginable, returning Heaven our grateful Thanks for its bounteous Mercy. And now I am ſettled, I'll take Leave of my Reader with this Couplet of the Poet:

O never let a virtuous Mind deſpair,
For conſtant Hearts are Love's peculiar Care.

THE

THE

VOYAGE,

SHIPWRECK,

AND

Miraculous ESCAPE

OF

Richard Caſtelman, Gent.

With a Deſcription of *Penſylvania*, and the City *Philadelphia*, &c.

THE VOYAGE, &c.

OF

Richard Caſtelman, Gent.

THE Dangers at Sea are certainly more imminent than thoſe on Shore; even in the faireſt Weather, the Space is very ſmall between this World and the next.

A *Grecian* Philoſopher was, in my Opinion, much in the Right, when ask'd by a Friend if he would go to a neighbouring Iſland in the *Helleſpont* to hunt, anſwer'd, if he ſhould be guilty of ſo much Folly, he ſhould have no other Hope but of returning ſafe back, for thoſe that truſted their Lives to the Sea ventur'd with a changing Miſtreſs.

I embark'd on Board Captain *Cox*, bound for *Charles-Town* in *Carolina*, with Mr. *Jones* and his Family, and arriv'd ſafe there without any great Hazard, juſt when Captain *Moor* had made a Deſcent upon the *Spaniards* of St. *Auguſtine*, a Plantation to the South-

ward

ward of *Carolina*, and return'd with conſiderable Booty. By ſome of the *Colony* his Proceedings were cenſur'd with Injuſtice, being the *Spaniards* had not any Notice of the Rupture between *England* and *Spain*; but all Stratagems are lawful in War.

Some time after, the *Spaniards* reſenting the Uſage of the *Engliſh*, fitted out five Sail of Men of War, and ſeveral Tranſports, to repay them in their own Coin.

They landed eight hundred Men in the Bay, and ſent two Trumpeters to Sir *Nathaniel Johnſon*, at that time Governor of *Charles-town*, to ſurrender; but he ſent 'em Word back, as the Place was intruſted to him by the Queen his Miſtreſs, he was reſolv'd to hold it out to the laſt. The Meſſengers inform'd their Admiral of Sir *Nathaniel*'s Reſolution, and likewiſe added, that the Town was too well mann'd to be eaſily taken. He thought better on't, recall'd his Men, and ſail'd away.

This Attempt very much alarm'd the Country, and put 'em upon fortifying *Charles-town*, which at preſent may laugh at all Attempts from a foreign Foe, or the native *Indians*, who us'd before to infeſt them daily.

Charles-town, or *Charles* City, the Capital of *Carolina*, is ſituated upon a Neck of Land form'd by a River on each Side, (nam'd *Aſhley* and *Cooper* Rivers, from the firſt Plantations) well ſtor'd with Fiſh. There was when I was there but an indifferent wooden Church; but before I left the Place, Subſcriptions were taken in to build a regular Stone Building. There are upwards of a thouſand Houſes, very neatly built, with Gardens almoſt to every Houſe. There is Plenty of every Thing for the Life of Man to be found at *Charles-town*. It lies in 32 Deg. 40 Min. Northern Latitude. The

Trade

Trade of this Place is more conſiderable for its Bigneſs than any other Plantation in *America*; it being the Southermoſt Settlement belonging to the Crown of *England* upon the Continent; and I have been inform'd they have Dealings three hundred Leagues up the Country, which is very much facilitated by the numerous navigable Rivers that come from the Mountains. The Climate is very wholſome; tho' moſt *Europeans* have, at their firſt Arrival, the Diſtemper of the Country, which proceeds from Change of Air and Diet; yet I had the good Fortune to eſcape with a ſwell'd Arm, which had like to have ended in the Mortification of a Finger; but I was happily cur'd by the Care and Advice of Madam *Rhett*, the only good Surgeon on the Place: Tho' were I to enumerate her other good Qualities, my ſmall Tract would exceed in Bulk my Intentions: I ſhall only ſay, another *Dacier* may be found in *America*.

I ſtaid at *Charles-town* upwards of eight Months, and was well entertain'd by the courteous Inhabitants; for I muſt own Pleaſure as well as Profit induced me to travel, tho' I have no Inclination that way now.

Mr. *Jones*, the Perſon concern'd with me in Trade, was oblig'd to go to *Bermuda*, being Secretary and Provoſt-Marſhal of the *Summer-Iſlands*; and in a ſhort Time after I follow'd with his Family. We met with no other Accident than a large Shark that follow'd our Veſſel ſeveral Days together, and the Maſter told me he was well aſſur'd ſome One on Board would die. I laugh'd at his Superſtition, and endeavour'd to rally him out of it, but he ſtill perſiſted in his Opinion. When the Shark appear'd firſt, every Body was in good Health, but in three Days time a Woman Paſſenger expir'd of a Fever; whom he committed to the Waves, and was probably intomb'd in the Bowels of the Shark,

for he took his Leave of us the ſame Day. The Maſter told me, he had made it his Obſervation for ſeveral Years, and was never once out. 'Tis not impoſſible but the Shank at Sea has the ſame Inſtinct as the Vulture at Land.

When I arriv'd at St. *George*'s the Capital of *Bermudas*, I was as well pleas'd with the Climate and Inhabitants as I was at *Carolina*.

St. *George*'s Town is ſeated in the Bottom of a Bay of the ſame Name, and is very well fortify'd. It contains about two hundred Houſes, with a Church ſomething handſomer than that of *Charles-town*. The Incumbent was the Reverend Mr. *Holland*, a Perſon of a good Underſtanding. I had a Preſent, an *Antelope*'s Foot ſet in Gold for a Tobacco-Stopper, which I was to deliver to the Biſhop of *Bangor*, his Patron; but it was loſt among my other Things in my Ship-wreck.

There is a perpetual Spring to be obſerv'd in theſe Iſlands, and the old Leaves never drop before they are thruſt out by new ones. Their Fruit is in Bloſſoms, Buds, and Ripe at the ſame Time. The Air is generally temperate and innubilous, but now and then troubled with violent Thunder and Lightning; and I have been ſhown ſeveral Rocks that they ſay were ſplit by Lightning.

I was informed by a Gentleman that had coaſted along theſe Iſlands, that their Number amounts to 378, but above 300 of them deſerve no other Name than Rocks; and moſt of the others that are inhabited have not above half a dozen Houſes upon them.

The Soil of all the cultivated Iſlands is alike, being very fruitful; and ſome People imagine they were once join'd, making one intire Iſland, but were divided as they are now by the Inundation of the Sea: And what gives them Ground for this Opinion is, that the

the Waves daily leſſen the ſmall ones. But this is only Conjecture.

I am ſorry to ſay that the former Inhabitants gain'd much by Pirates; and even ſome that had large Plantations when I was there, were little better at firſt than Sea-Robbers.

The late Queen being inform'd of it, order'd Mr. *Larkins* with a Commiſſion to try the Pirates, where-ever they reſorted in her Dominions in *America*. I happen'd to be at *Bermuda* when he arriv'd there. He acquainted the People in Power with his Commiſſion, but met with a very cold Reception from them: But however he proceeded in his Deſign, and iſſued out Warrants to ſeize the ſuſpected Perſons, Mr. *Jones*, as Provoſt-Marſhal, was oblig'd to execute the Warrants; but he met with Reſiſtance every where, and was very ill us'd by ſome of them, even to the Hazard of his Life.

The Governor, whoſe Name was *Bennet*, as he repreſented the Monarch of *England*, ſhould have aſſiſted Mr. *Jones* and Mr. *Larkins*; but whether he was afraid of offending the Inhabitants, or not inquiring truly into the Matter, Mr. *Jones* and Mr. *Larkins* were ſeiz'd and committed to Priſon. Mr. *Jones* firſt made his Eſcape, and arriv'd ſafe in *England*; where he ſet forth his Caſe, and had all the Redreſs he deſir'd: He was order'd back, and re-inſtated in his former Poſt.

Thoſe that oppos'd him, I am inform'd, had reprimanding Letters from *England*, upon his Account; but when Hate is fix'd in the Minds of ſome Men, 'tis never to be rooted out: Their Animoſities roſe as high as ever, and he was once more oblig'd to abandon the Iſland. There is now depending a Suit in Law between the Governor and Mr. *Jones*, who are both

in *England*; and there is no doubt but Juſtice will take Place.

Mr. *Larkins* was put into the Dungeon of the Priſon, and it was the common Report, he was deny'd even Food to ſuſtain Life; and would have certainly expir'd for Want, if he had not made his Eſcape in the Habit of a Woman, with the Aſſiſtance of a true Friend; which is hard to find any where, but more eſpecially among the Men of Power in *America:* But his Confinement had ſo worn him, and he had contracted ſo many Diſtempers by his ill Uſage, that he expir'd in his Voyage home.

As I ſaid before, this Iſland was in former Times the common Receptacle for Pirates, and indeed their chiefeſt Gain proceeded from trading with them. Here they came to ſpend what Money they got, and recreate themſelves; it lying very convenient for them, between 32 and 33 Degrees of North Latitude, and three hundred Leagues from the Continent or any other Iſland.

Among their Trees, the *Cedar* is the moſt plentiful, which they uſe even for Firing. I have ſeen Veſſels of a hundred Ton built with Cedar; and moſt of the Houſes are compos'd of the ſame.

The Laws *ſhould* be the ſame as thoſe in *England*; but Power is generally Chief Judge in *America:* Yet if a Perſon never comes under the Laſh of the Superior, there is very comfortable Living at *Bermuda.*

Mr. *Jones*, Captain *Bayley*, and my ſelf, had jointly bought a Veſſel of about 140 Ton, and we had got in all our Freight but Tobacco, which we were to take in at *Virginia*, and then make up with the Fleet for *England.* While we were fitting out our Veſſel, Mr. *Jones* was employ'd in his own Affairs, therefore the Care of his Share was committed to me.

We

We ſet Sail from *Bermuda*, *April* 5, 1710, with a fair Gale, which continu'd till we loſt Sight of the Iſlands; but in the Night a contrary Wind ſprung up, and blowing very freſh at N. N. E. carry'd us to the Southward of the *Bermudas*; and it was the greateſt Providence in the World we were not ſtav'd upon the Rocks; but with great Difficulty we got clear of them, being oblig'd to ply it to Windward three Days.

We had the Misfortune to find our Ship none of the beſt Sailors; yet in four Days we got in our proper Latitude; and the Wind continuing pretty fair, we made very good Way. We had no other Diverſion than taking Dolphins with our Fizgig; but in my Opinion it is but indifferent Food.

We were forty one, including Paſſengers; and many of thoſe being ſick with the Rocking of the Ship, made it uncomfortable living among them; and I wiſh'd my ſelf once more on Shore.

April 12, we were alarm'd at the Sight of a Veſſel we diſcover'd, which we imagin'd to be a *Spaniſh* Privateer. We crouded all the Sail we could to avoid her, which would have been very hard to do, if immediately after the Wind had not chang'd to S. S. E. a very ſtrong Gale. We bore away before it, and ere Night loſt Sight of her.

As we were at Supper in the Cabin, a Son of Captain *Bayly*'s came and told his Father that the Colour of the Water was chang'd; but his Father reprimanded him, and told him he had loſt his Senſes, for it was impoſſible to be near any Shore. When the Sea changes its Colour, 'tis an evident Token Land is not far off. We continu'd the ſame Courſe under a Foreſail; but our Terror and Surprize was not to be expreſt, when in the Morning Watch, the Captain, who being upon Deck

diſcover'd Land right-a-head, came down into my Cabin, and with Tears in his Eyes deſir'd, I would riſe. I knew by his Looks ſomething extraordinary was the Matter, and got upon Deck to be reſolv'd, for Captain *Bayley* had not Power to utter a Word. I ſoon found the Danger, for I perceiv'd we were in View of *Virginia*, near *Ronoke* Sand-Banks. We did all that was in our Power to weather 'em, but our Ship having a round Head, ſhe would not obey the Helm; therefore we all agreed to make in for the Land, hoping, as it ſeem'd a bold Shore, it was Tide of Flood, and then we might through Providence land ſafe. But it proving Tide of Ebb, we bulg'd upon the *Ronoke* Sand-Banks, but by lightning the Ship, and cutting our Maſts by the Board, we got clear of that; yet keeping ſtill in for the Shore, we ſtruck upon the ſecond Sand-Bank, but not very violently, ſo we threw out our Anchors in hopes we might ride out the Tide; but the Wind increaſing, we dragg'd them, and were violently thrown upon another Sand-Bank, where our Ship ſtuck, and the Waves daſh'd over us. We had ſeveral Women with Children on Board, and their diſmal Cries pierc'd my very Heart. The Boat was order'd out, to ſee if we could gain the Shore that Way. I jump'd into her one of the firſt, but ere we could leave the Side of the Ship, ſhe was ſtav'd in Pieces. All we could do in this Exigence was to get into the Ship again; and with much Difficulty we compaſs'd it, being dragg'd in by main Force; yet if I had not held faſt hold by the Coat of one that was in the Water with me, and the Foot of another, I muſt have inevitably periſh'd, for I was under the Keel. When I had got Footing upon Deck, I fetch'd my Box out of my Cabin, and was for ſecuring my Money, which amounted to fifty Pound. While I was buſying my ſelf with uncording my Box, the Captain's

Siſter

Sister reprimanded me for thinking on my Money, when all their Lives were in Danger. I muſt own other Thoughts had been more ſuitable to my Condition, therefore I was aſham'd of what I was about, and had no other Regard than to aſſiſt in ſaving our ſelves. It prov'd a fruitleſs Labour in endeavouring to get off the Veſſel, therefore we laid aſide all Hopes of ſaving the Cargo.

We had two Blacks on Board that belong'd to Captain *Bayley*, that were excellent Divers (for the Surge was ſo violent no one could ſtem the Billows but by diving) who offer'd to get with a Rope on Shore, and faſten it from the Ship to a Stump of a Tree; and divine Providence had ſo order'd it, there was not any thing like a Tree for half a Mile on each Side of us. I told the Captain it look'd like a good Omen, and, by the Help of God, I did not doubt but we ſhould get ſafe on Shore.

The *Negroes* with much Difficulty did as they had intended, and by the Help of the Rope came back to the Ship. Captain *Bayley*, his Wife, and Mate, ventur'd into the Water firſt, upon the Awning of the Ship, and got ſafe on Shore; tho' it broke as ſoon as they were landed. But my Ears are even pierc'd this Moment with the Cries of his poor Children that were in the Ship, which was more terrible to me than the Storm. I offer'd to help 'em upon the Rope, but they were in ſuch Frights and Terrors that I could not prevail upon them to venture.

Two of the Sailors got upon the Rope juſt as I was going to venture, and with their Buſtling had very near thrown me once more into the Sea. I offer'd my Aſſiſtance to the Captain's Siſter, but ſhe was as timorous as the Children, and fed her ſelf with vain Hopes that the Waves would leave them by Degrees, and

they might with leſs Danger get on Shore. I took my Leave of all that were on Board, and recommending them and my ſelf to the Care of Heaven, I got into the Water and laid faſt hold on the Rope, and, with the Aſſiſtance of one of the *Negroes*, got ſome Diſtance from the Ship; but the Waves drove back with ſuch an Impetuoſity, that I was many times in Danger of loſing my Hold, and ſo be carried into the main Sea: which had certainly come to paſs, if I had not been aſſiſted by the Black; for every time a great Sea was coming to break over us, he would cry out, *For the Lord's Sake, Maſter, hold faſt:* And whenever he call'd to me, I ſettled my ſelf to receive the Force of the Waves, which would as oft overwhelm me; and I poured out my Prayers to God for his Aſſiſtance. At laſt, with much Struggling, I could feel my Feet touch the Ground ſometimes, and by degrees, with the utmoſt Difficulty, got Footing; and at every Retire of the Waves ſet my ſelf to running. When they drove back upon the Shore, I ſeiz'd upon the Rope, or otherwiſe I had been daſh'd to Pieces on the Sand. But at laſt my Strength began to fail me, with the violent Fatigue I had undergone; and if the *Negro* had not dragg'd me on the Sands, (whoſe Strength alſo was almoſt gone) I muſt, after all my Strugglings for Life, have reſign'd my ſelf to the Waves.

Aſſoon as I could recover my Spirits, I gave the divine Creator of all things Thanks for my wonderful Delivery from the Jaws of Death; which was ſtill more wonderful, for as ſoon as I had let go the Rope (ſome other Perſons venturing the ſame Way) it broke, ſo that not one of the unfortunate Wretches came on Shore, but were ſwallow'd up by the Waves.

A-while after I had got on Shore, Captain *Bayley*, his Wife, and the Mate came down to me, and in-

form'd

form'd me that they could find no Road, nor any Inhabitants. This News renew'd our Griefs, for we ſeem'd to be in as much Danger of Starving now, as of Drowning before: And to increaſe our Dread, it was not above three Hours to Night, and then we had the wild Bears to fear.

While we were lamenting our Condition, we heard ſomebody hollow up in the Woods, which reviv'd our drooping Senſes: But running to ſee who it was, we, much to our Grief, found it to be one of the Sailors, that eſcap'd, who was hollowing to his Companion; and they were both as drunk as poſſible for them to be, with Rum, before they left the Ship. Such Brutes are ſome Sailors, that even the greateſt Dangers will not deter them from Drinking, if they have an Opportunity.

When we were all together, (that is the Captain, his Wife, and Mate, two white Sailors, two *Negroes*, and my ſelf,) we reſolv'd to walk to the Southward, to ſee if it were poſſible to find any Habitations; but in leſs than an Hour, our Journey was ſtopt by an impenetrable Wood, and we were oblig'd to return.

We then went Northward, but were interrupted by large Swamps, and not the leaſt Mark of any Plantation. Thus, maroon'd as we were, we went back again, and could perceive the poor Wretches in the Veſſel, lifting up their Hands to us for Succour; but we cou'd neither give them Aſſiſtance or Comfort. I made 'em Signs to let them know our Condition was as bad as theirs, and that they had nothing to think on but Heaven.

It growing near Night, ſome of the poor Creatures ventur'd into the Water, but were ſoon drown'd. In ſhort, every Object we beheld increas'd our Horror. None of us had eat or drank for two Days, not-

withſtanding our Fatigue. Tho' quite caſt down my ſelf, I endeavour'd to chear my Fellow-Sufferers; and that we might be ſhelter'd from the Inclemency of the Night (which, to add to our wretched Condition, prov'd a rainy one) we by joint Conſent and Labour, while the Day laſted, pluck'd down a good Number of *Palmetoe* Leaves; and with Pieces of Trees (which we tore, for we had never a Knife among us) built us up a Hut, and ſhelter'd it from the Weather as well as we could.

The *Palmetoe* Leaf is very large, and the ſame that they make the plaited Straw of, which forms the fineſt Hats, that come from *Bermuda* and *Carolina*. It was a very melancholy Reflexion to think of our Condition: Nothing to lie upon but the bare wet Ground, and our Clothes that cover'd us were thoſe upon our Backs, dropping with Rain and Salt-Water; no Food nor Hopes of getting any; and I was even ready to expire with Thirſt. While the Hut was preparing, to allay my Drought, I ſtole by my ſelf, urin'd in my Tobacco-Box, and drank it with as great a Gouſt, as ever I have done *French* Claret before or ſince.

When I came to lie down in our wretched Tenement, the Place was full; but I e'en laid my ſelf down upon them, (and, tho' a Woman was among us, had no Thoughts of different Sexes) and by Degrees made Room for my ſelf. Notwithſtanding their complaining of Legs and Arms, I held my Tongue, and maugre all my Wants and Misfortunes, ſlept ſoundly till Morning: But with the Day Reflexion return'd, ſharpen'd with the extremeſt Hunger.

When we had got all together again, (that is, ſeven of us, for one of the drunken Sailors was found dead ſome Diſtance from our Cabin, as we might well imagine, with Cold and Want, and ſpoil'd an excellent

Pro-

Proverb, *That drunken Men never get any Harm*) by my Advice we addreſs'd our ſelves to the All-ſeeing Power for Succour; all but the Mate, who told us that Praying alone would not do, therefore while we *pray'd*, he would go *ſeek*. After our extempore Oriſons were over, we roſe up, and reſolv'd to go into the Woods, to gather, if it was poſſible, ſomething to kill our Hunger. But as we turn'd toward the Beach, we ſaw the Mate with another Man, a Stranger to us, coming towards us. The Dove could not be a more pleaſing Sight to the Patriarch *Noah*, when he return'd with the Olive-Branch in his Mouth, than that Stranger was to us. We ran with all the Speed which our weak Condition would admit of, to meet him. Under his Arm he had got a little Tub of Butter that the Sea had thrown up; and though mix'd with Sand and Gravel, we as greedily devour'd it as if it had been Partridge or Pheaſant; but our Misfortune was, when we had tir'd our ſelves with Eating, for I can't ſay we were ſatisfy'd, we all of us grew Sick, and caſt it up again.

The Stranger, to relieve us, gave us a Couple of Limes among us, which we greedily devour'd, and to the Butter again. But what was a pleaſing Surprize to us, our Mate inform'd us a Puncheon of freſh Water was thrown on Shore. We eagerly ran, and my Tobacco-Box ſerv'd us inſtead of a Cup. The Mate, who had ſlak'd his Thirſt before, would not let us drink too much, for fear of endangering our Lives; but with this indifferent Repaſt we recover'd our fainting Spirits, and were more able to bear the Fatigue of the Day.

Our Veſſel was drove cloſe on Shore, but broke in many Pieces; and it was a melancholy Sight to behold the dead Bodies covering the Sand: But what had almoſt kill'd Captain *Bayley* and his Wife with Sorrow,

were

were the Bodies of his Sister and one of his Children, half buried in the Sands. For my own part, I had no other thing to grieve for but the Loss of my Cargo, which consisted of Cotton, Indigo, and Straw Ware; which, if it had arriv'd safe to *England*, would have yielded me a considerable Fortune. Tho' the Loss of my Harpsichord and *Italian* Timbrel I most regretted, whose Remains I discover'd upon the Shore; and the whole Strand was cover'd with *Bermuda* Hats. Some we pick'd up; and among other Pieces of the Wreck, the Mate discover'd my Box floating on the Surface which, by good Fortune, he dragg'd on Shore. In it was my Money, Linen, and Books of Accounts. We kept this private from the Stranger, and bury'd it in a Place I had mark'd by several Observations: For he had giv'n us to understand, it was his usual Custom, after a violent Storm, to come to the Sand-Banks in Expectation of Shipwrecks; therefore we were not assur'd he might not find Means to destroy us in Hopes of what we had on Shore, or leave us without assisting us to some Plantation.

When we had done all we could about our Wreck, we took leave of the miserable Sight, and set forward to the Stranger's Plantation, which was about ten Miles off. He led us along the Woods by certain Marks on Trees, which we were ignorant of; but the Inhabitants know how to find one another's Plantations by those Marks; and in four Hours (for I had my Watch in my Pocket when I was Shipwreck'd) we once more beheld the pleasing Sight of a Chimney Smoking, which was the Habitation of our Guide. You may imagine the Joy we had to enter once more into a House, after our miserable Hardships. But when we came there, we found but indifferent Accommodation. There were no other Eatables to be got, but a little Hung-Beef, and

and *Humminy*, (that is, *Indian* Corn ground, mix'd with Milk, and dry'd before the Fire:) but this was Feasting to us; for Hunger is the best Sauce.

There were but two Beds in the House, which the Family complimented us with. The Captain and his Wife had one, and Mr. *Burnam* and I had the other.

I deferr'd going for my Box till the second Day after our Arrival; for I was very much out of Order with the Fatigue I had underwent; and by lying on the wet Ground I had lost my Hearing, which I did not recover throughly till my Arrival in *England*.

The Mate, two *Negroes*, and my self, set out with one to guide us to the Place of our Shipwreck; but we were so long in looking for my Box, that we were ready to give over all Search: But just as we were thinking of returning, the Mate happily found it out.

The *Negroes* took it by Turns, and we brought it safe to the Plantation.

I had a good Parcel of Linen in it, which I lent to my Fellow Sufferers: But it was an odd Sight to discover so many Scare-crows, with tatter'd Coats and fine ruffled Shirts on.

Our Host was very well satisfy'd for our Entertainment with what he found of the Wreck.

We staid here five Days to refresh our selves, and then resolv'd to go up the River to wait on Colonel *Carew*, Deputy-Governor of *North-Carolina*; a Gentleman of an old Acquaintance. We hir'd a Canoo with two Sails, and embark'd, Capt. *Bayley*, his Wife, the Mate, two Blacks and the Sailor, with another from the Plantation to assist us. We sail'd up *Ronoke* Sound with a fresh Gale, and at eight a-clock the same Evening came before the Governor's House, situate on the

the River *Notaway*, which runs into the *Ronoke* about fifty Leagues from the Sea.

I ſent up one of the Men to acquaint the Governor I was come to wait on him; and upon the Inſtant he came down to the Shore, accompany'd by Capt. *Cruthach*, a Native of *Bermuda* Iſland, and one I had long been acquainted with. He had left *Bermuda* ſince we came away, and the Governor and he had juſt been wiſhing I had eſcap'd the Storm as the Meſſenger came to him.

Aſſoon as ever he ſaw me, he cry'd out, I am ſorry for your Misfortune, I can eaſily perceive an ill Wind drove you hither. He would not ſuffer us to talk much, but hurry'd the whole Company into his Dineing-Room, where ſtood a Supper and a Bowl of Punch, with ſeveral Gentlemen his Gueſts. He begg'd their Pardon, but told them they ſhould neither eat nor drink before we had ſatisfy'd our ſelves; and we ſoon clear'd what was put before us: and then another Supper was provided for the whole Company, which we had our Shares of, notwithſtanding what we had eaten before.

The Governor was but ill provided with Beds, therefore Capt. *Bayley* and his Wife went to Mr. *Glover's*, a neighbouring Gentleman; and the Secretary would have me home with him, about a Mile from the Governor's. When we came to his Houſe, we found a Quarter of a *Shote* (a young Hog) and a Turkey on the Table. I ſat down once more, and made a hearty Supper; and I muſt own, I never thought I ſhould bring my Stomach to its proper Tone again. After we had drank very heartily, we went to Bed. The next Morning we breakfaſted upon broil'd Fowls and Chocolate. *(My Readers, if any, I hope, will not ridicule my taking Notice ſo often of Eating, till they put themſelves in my ſtarv'd Condition.*

The

The next Day we went to dine with a Friend of the Secretary's; and as we were at Dinner, a Meſſenger came from the Governor and Capt. *Bayley*, to inform me a Veſſel was going that Inſtant for *Kakatan*, (a Harbour where the *Virginia* Fleet make up, and with the Convoy ſet ſail all together for *England*) and that Capt. *Bayley* and the reſt of my unfortunate Company waited on Board for me. Notwithſtanding my Stomach, I was oblig'd to make all the Diſpatch I could to the Place where the Veſſel lay; but to my great Misfortune, the Wind proving fair for them, they were oblig'd to take the Advantage; and when I arriv'd at the Port they were almoſt out of Sight. I was very much concern'd at this Loſs of my Paſſage, for it was very probable I might not get ſuch another Opportunity till the Fleet was gone, and then I ſhould be oblig'd to ſtay till next Year.

The Governor ſeeing me ſo much concern'd, offer'd me his Horſe to go to *Kakatan* by Land, about 120 Leagues from the Place where we were; and he procured me a Guide, an honeſt *Quaker*, who for ten Pieces of Eight agreed to accompany me, and bring the Governor's Horſe back again.

We ſet out immediately; for I had no Luggage to carry: becauſe Capt. *Bayley*, as imagining I would come time enough, had got all my Things on Board.

We rode that Day about twenty Mile, thro' unfrequented Woods; but my Guide knew the Way by the above-mention'd Marks upon Trees. We came to a Quaker's Plantation; and all the Compliments my Guide us'd to him was only this, *Friend, I have brought along with me a ſhip-wreck'd Gentleman, who is going to* Kakatan, *and deſires a Lodging to night*; who was anſwer'd by our new Hoſt, *Friend, come in; thou art welcome.* And indeed he made his Words good, for

for we had plenty of every thing, and a handsome Apartment to lie in, the best in the House. I was very much pleas'd with his Conversation, for I found him a Man of a sound Understanding.

In the Morning when I was going, I offer'd to pay him for what I had; but he seem'd much offended at my Proposition. Said he, *My House is no Inn, and we see Strangers so very seldom, that they are always welcome when they come; and God forbid that I should lessen the Store of an unfortunate Man, like thy self.* In short, this is the Treatment I met with in my six Days Travel. Hospitality is commendable in all Countries, and *England* was once famous for it, but it seems at present banish'd to *America*. The third Day my Horse tumbled with me into a deep Swamp, and I was not only in danger of drowning, but of having my Brains dash'd out with his Hoofs in his Floundering. I continu'd so long in this Condition, that I gave my self up for lost; for my Guide could not come to assist me, without being in the same Danger. At last, my Horse, with much struggling, got Foot on firm Ground; and by good Fortune I had got hold of the Stirrup, and he drew me up with him, to the great Joy of my Guide, who gave me for gone.

You must imagine I was not very easy in the rest of my Day's Journey, which I was oblig'd to ride all cover'd with Water and Mud. But our Host, where we lay at Night, got all Things clean and dry by the time I rose in the Morning.

Our first four Days we travell'd through vast Woods, without seeing any humane Creature, but at the Plantations where we din'd and supp'd; and our Stages were very different, sometimes more than twenty Mile asunder, and at other times not above seven.

Monstrous

Monſtrous Snakes I ſaw of different Kinds, but none attempted to come near us till the fifth Day; when, as we were riding along, my Horſe gave a Start, and ran on with me five hundred Yards before I could ſtop him. I turn'd about, and ſaw a *Rattle-Snake*, of a monſtrous Bulk, ſpring at my Guide, who happen'd at that time to be behind me; and it was very well he was, for if I had been in his Place, I ſhould certainly have met with Death, in not knowing how to avoid it.

Their manner of ſpringing upon any thing is this; they fold themſelves up in Rings, then clap their Tail to the Ground, and dart upon their Prey: But as they are ſome time in doing it, a Perſon may avoid them, who knows their Manner.

There is but one Way to cure the Bite of theſe venomous Creatures, and that is to apply immediately the Fundament of a Fowl to the Wound, and keep it there till it be dead; which does not always happen. If the Fowl dies, there is Hope of a Cure; but if it does not, all the Phyſicians in the World can't help you. My Guide told me, this was one of the largeſt he had ever ſeen. It is very rare for them to come ſo near the Roads, but this being little frequented perhaps was the Reaſon of it. The Rattle, which is in their Tail, makes an odd Sort of a Noiſe. When I was at *Philadelphia*, a Gentleman ſhow'd me the Rattle. It was about a Yard and a half long, in ſmall Joints, cover'd with a thin tranſparent Skin, like your white Gold-beater's Skin. They ſay they have a Joint grows every Year; but I can't tell who can prove it. The Rattle, as it lay folded in my Hand, ſeem'd ſo light, that if I had not ſeen it there I could not have perceiv'd it by the Weight.

The

The laſt Day's Journey was one of the pleaſanteſt I had ever travell'd in my Life, in a fine ſweet Road, ſhaded by Trees for many Miles together, and through them on each ſide, numerous Plantations, with a well cultivated Glebe. The whole Proſpect put me in Mind of the Vale of *Eveſham* in *England*.

The ſixth Night I lay at the Father's of my Guide, having one Day's Journey more to reach *Kakatan*. Mr. *Ratcliff*, the Name of my Guide's Father, was Owner of a handſome Plantation upon *James* River; and there were ſo many about it, that it look'd like a little Town.

The next Day after my Arrival, being *Sunday*, there was a general Aſſembly of the Brethren, and moſt of the Elders din'd with Mr. *Ratcliff*. When Dinner was ſerv'd, they began in their uſual manner with their long Graces, and when one had made an end, another roſe up to begin; but Mr. *Ratcliff* begg'd, upon my Account, that they would for once abridge the Motion of the Spirit, and let it take its full Scope for an After-Grace.

We had Notice from *Kakatan*, that the Fleet would not ſail for ſome time; ſo I ſtaid with my friendly Quaker four Days, who treated me very generouſly. I call'd for his Son to diſmiſs him back to the Governor, with the Horſes: As I was paying him the Money I agreed for, his Father coming in by Accident, was very angry with him, and declared he would diſown him for his Child if he took a Penny. I was not at all pleas'd with the Refuſal, for the poor Man had taken a great deal of Pains with me; wherefore meeting by Chance with four Yards of Muſlin to be ſold, I bought it, and made him a Preſent of it unknown to his Father; tho' I had ſome Difficulty

Difficulty to make him accept of it, after what his Father had ſaid to him.

The fourth Day after my Arrival, we had Notice the Fleet would ſail in a few Days. This gave me a great deal of Uneaſineſs; for I could not get to *Kakatan* without a Boat, and Mr. *Ratcliff*'s was broke to Pieces ſome time before I came there. But he ſeeing the Uneaſineſs I labour'd under, procur'd one: Yet another Difficulty aroſe, we could not gain, even for Money, any Body to row us. Well, ſaid Mr. *Ratcliff*, ſince we have got a Boat, thou ſhalt not be made uneaſy for want of People to work it, I and my Children will go along with thee. Accordingly we ſet out, and arrived at *Kakatan*: But we were ſurpriz'd not to find above five Sail there, and one of 'em that Veſſel that Capt. *Bayley* went in; ſo I had the Satisfaction of getting my Things again.

Notwithſtanding the Fleet's not being there, the Place was ſo full of People in Expectation of it, that there was no Lodging to be had. I was not ſo much concern'd for my ſelf as for my generous Quaker, who was to meet with ſuch bad Accommodation for his good Nature in accompanying me.

I met with a Gentleman bound for *England*, one Mr. *Le Cruce*, at preſent a Wine-Merchant in St. *Martin*'s Lane, who ſeeing the Shifts we were put to, offer'd me half his Bed, which I accepted of for my Friendly Quaker, but I could not prevail upon him to take it: therefore I lay with Mr. *Le Cruce* my ſelf, and Mr. *Ratcliff* with his Sons made what Shift they could upon the Ground.

It was the Report of every one, that the Fleet would not get together in four Months, ſo I reſolved to take a Trip to *Philadelphia* in the mean time.

I did not know how to faſten a Preſent upon Mr. *Ratcliff* for his Civility, for he would not hear of any thing like it; but at laſt I found out this Method. I bought a Runlet of Rum, a Thing very much in Eſteem among the Planters, and I begg'd Mr. *Ratcliff* to add to the Obligations I had already received from him, by taking Charge of it and a Letter to one Mr. *Randal*, a Planter in his Neighbourhood. In the Letter I ſent to Mr. *Randal*, was one incloſ'd for Mr. *Ratcliff*, where I inform'd him the Rum was to him, only as a ſmall Acknowledgment for the many Obligations he had laid me under.

The next Day he and his Sons took their leave of me, even without taking any thing for the Hire of the Boat, tho' I had bargain'd for it before I left the Place.

The Veſſel that was to carry me to *Philadelphia* was not clear'd of her Lading, therefore I was oblig'd to ſtay ſeven Days at *Kakatan*, which is no Place of Reſort but only once a Year, at the Time the Fleet makes up for *England*; ſo there are not many Conveniences expected there.

The Day before I ſail'd for *Philadelphia*, I receiv'd a Letter from my Friendly Quaker, with a Preſent of a powder'd *Shote* and ſeveral Turkies, which he ſent me by Water.

The Letter was as follows.

Friend *Caſtelman*,

I *Receiv'd thy Preſent in a very particular manner; and tho' I am not very eaſy about it, yet I give thee my Thanks, with a Promiſe of a grateful Remembrance from me and mine. I pray thee to accept what I ſend thee as from a real Friend; and I commit thee to God.*

J. RATCLIF.

The

The Veſſel had but one Cabin in it, which was taken up by a Woman-Paſſenger; ſo that I was oblig'd to make ſhift to wrap my ſelf up in the Sail; and the Spray of the Waves beating over us now and then, I had but a wet Lodging; and tho it was nothing to what I underwent before, yet I got more Cold by it. We made ſo good Way that we got up to *Newcaſtle* in *Delaware* River the ſecond Evening; and we prevail'd upon the Maſter to ſtay there all Night, where I got a good Lodging at a publick Houſe, being the firſt time I had paid for any thing ſince my Shipwreck.

New-Caſtle, the Capital of the County of *New-Caſtle*, is a handſome well-built Town, ſtanding upon an Eminence, which gives you a pleaſant View from the River *Delaware*. The *Dutch* were the firſt Founders, but did not poſſeſs it long. There are now above 500 handſome Houſes, and Foundations for ſeveral more. As it is daily increaſing in Wealth by Trade, we may imagine it will increaſe in Buildings and Inhabitants. I have been inform'd they have diſcover'd in the Neighbourhood of this Town a fine Iron Mine.

The Day following we din'd at *Cheſter*, a little neat Town on the ſame River, conſiſting of near three hundred Houſes. We were very handſomely entertain'd there by a Gentleman of the Place, who would accompany us to *Philadelphia*. We had a pleaſant Voyage, with many delightful Proſpects of Towns, Villages, and Plantations, on both ſides of the River; and in the Evening we landed at *Philadelphia*, the Capital of *Penſylvania*.

Penſylvania takes its Name from *William Penn*, Eſq; Son to Sir *William Penn*, Admiral of a Squadron in the *Dutch* War, where he behav'd like a Man of Courage and Conduct. His Son, the preſent Proprietor, met with ſome Difficulty in obtaining his Patent, by

by reaſon he had declar'd himſelf Head of the People call'd *Quakers*.

Penſylvania is compos'd of all that Tract of Land, with its Iſlands, Rivers, Coaſts, and Bays, which lies from forty to forty-five Degrees of North Latitude, and is one of the richeſt Countries in his Majeſty's foreign Dominions.

The Air is pleaſant, wholeſome, and unclouded, or very rarely overcaſt. Tho' the Winter is ſomething colder, and the Summer hotter than in *England*, yet the Inhabitants have known ſeveral Winters together without Froſts. The Day in the Summer is two Hours ſhorter than ours, and in Winter two Hours longer; which is really better for Buſineſs of all kinds. And certainly this is a Tract of Ground as well ſeated as any in the World, for Pleaſure and Profit. It is bounded on the Eaſt by *Weſt-Jerſey*, on the Weſt by *Virginia*, *Canada* on the North, and *Maryland* on the South; all, except *Canada*, fine *Engliſh* Settlements.

The original Inhabitants of all theſe Places are ſuppos'd to be the ten Tribes of the *Jews* that were ſcatter'd; but from whence they derive their Authority, even for this Suppoſition, I can't imagine. 'Tis true, ſome of the ancient *Jewiſh* Cuſtoms are among the *Indians*; but as every Nation and People have Cuſtoms peculiar to themſelves, in my Opinion there is nothing to be gather'd from thence. 'Tis certain they have ſomething of the Countenance of the *Jews*, they obſerve New Moons, and offer their Firſt Fruits to their Idols. They are moſt of 'em well made, and exactly proportion'd in their Features, without the thick Lips and flat Noſes of the *Negroes*. They are generally good natur'd and inoffenſive, ſlow to Anger, but hard to be appeas'd; a courteous and humane

humane Behaviour will gain upon 'em more than Severity: It is very ſeldom they wrong a good Maſter, but I have known 'em frequently venture their Lives for 'em. Their Language is very lofty and high-ſounding, but not copious, for one Word hath ſeveral Meanings I'll give you, from my Friend Mr. *Thomas*, a ſhort Specimen.

Hodi hita nee huska apeechi, nee machi Penſylvania. *Huska dogwachi keſhow apeechi newa, huska, hayly chetena koon poo.*

Thus in *Engliſh:*

Farewell, my Friend. I ſhall go ſhortly to Penſylvania. *We ſhall have a cold Moon preſently, and hard Froſts will ſoon follow.*

They throw their Children into the Water aſſoon as born, to harden their Bodies. The Buſineſs of the Men is to fiſh or hunt, and the Women to Till their Ground, and look after their Children, who commonly go alone at nine Months. They are moſt of them knowing in Botany; and if at any time viſited with Sickneſs, cure themſelves by their Knowledge in Herbs and Roots. They are exceeding charitable; and if any among 'em have the Misfortune to be Lame or Blind, they take care they ſhall want for nothing. The Boys go a hunting or fiſhing with the Father at ſix Years old; and when they are experienced in both, and arrive to their ſixteenth Year, they may marry. The Girls ſtay at home with their Mother, who inſtructs them in her Buſineſs. The Women are very modeſt and chaſte, and you can't affront them more than by ſaying any thing to the contrary of either. Adultery is puniſh'd with Death among 'em.

Their

Their Habitations are generally mean and ſmall, and their Utenſils a Pot, and two or three Calabaſhes, with a Bowl; and when they travel, they lie in the Woods about a Fire, to keep the wild Beaſts from them. They are People of a merry Diſpoſition, continually laughing and ſinging, even at their Work. They have ſome particular Songs among 'em, though but indifferent Tunes, and their Inſtruments of Muſick are as poor. They are generally given to Sobriety; but if they once get Liquor of the *Europeans*, they never give over till dead Drunk; and I have ſeen 'em lie in the middle of the Roads and Streets, like ſo many Dogs. Aſſoon as ever they come to themſelves, they plunge into the Water, and gather ſome Herbs, ſqueeze 'em into a Calabaſh, which they drink; by which Means they are recover'd, and are never ſick after their Debauches. Their Age generally comes up to ſeventy, and very few to eighty. I have heard one *Indian* ſpeaking to another, when on his Death-Bed, of the Uncertainty of this Life, and how happy he ſhould be in the Company of their God, where would be no want of Corn, or Wood, or any Thing that was needful for him. But there is a great Number inſtructed in the Chriſtian Faith. There are *Indian* Schools to teach 'em Writing as well as Reading; and moſt of 'em are very docile.

The Country of *Penſylvania* abounds with every thing neceſſary for the Life of Man, even for the moſt luxurious.

The Woods afford fine Pigeons, Pheaſants, Quails, Partridges, Woodcocks, Snipes, wild Turkies, and various other Birds. About the Rivers, Geeſe, Ducks, Swans, Teal, Divers, Brands, *&c.* In the Rivers (generally a gravelly Bottom) are to be found Herrings, Smelts, Roach, Dace, Eels, Perch, Salmon, Trout, Gurnets,

Gurnets, Shadds, Cats-heads, Sheeps-heads, and many more; with fine large Oysters, preferable to any I ever tasted in *England*; and when any of these are brought to Market, you may buy them very reasonably.

The Woods produce Cedar, Mulberry, Vines, Walnut, Beech, Ash, Chesnut, and the finest Oak for Building Ships. I am inform'd some of the Inhabitants have made Wine with Grapes of their own Growth; but I have heard nothing in Commendation of it.

The *Dutch* were the first Foreigners that came to these Parts; but they made but few Settlements; their chief Business was to trade with the *Indians* for Skins, Furrs, &c. and give them in Exchange, Rum, Beer, and Sugar. The next that appear'd was a Colony from *Sweden*, who began to plant and manure the Ground. The *Dutch* were offended at these Interlopers, as they call'd 'em, and threaten'd to make War upon 'em; which was prevented by the *Swedes* surrendring the Plantations to 'em, who return'd home.

In the *Dutch* War, Sir *Robert Carr* made a Descent upon 'em, outed them quite, and took Possession of it for the Crown of *England* in the Year 1666, and left a Relation of his, of the same Name, as Governor; but the next Year the *Dutch* got the Mastery again; and the few *English* that were there, settled themselves in other *English* Colonies, better provided with Defence against an Invader.

The *Dutch* remain'd Possessors of this pleasant Country till the Peace was concluded between *England* and *Holland*, and then it was deliver'd once again to the *English*; but no great Progress was made there till 1682, the Year after Mr. *Penn* had gain'd the Patent for it. In less than a Year there were a hundred Houses built, and form'd into a Town, to which Mr. *Penn* gave the Name of *Philadelphia*, (or Brotherly Love.) A

Place for its Situation very agreeable, ſeated high upon a Neck of Land, form'd by two fine navigable Rivers, two hundred Miles from the Sea, yet Ships of five hundred Ton can unlade on the Key.

The Country about it is rich, well-water'd and wooded; the Earth producing a vaſt Increaſe. They reap their Corn about the Beginning of *July*.

The Gardens and Orchards yield all Roots, Fruits and Flowers we have in *England*, and ſeveral peculiar only to the Country. The Air is ſo healthy, that there is no Occaſion for Phyſicians, being they find Cures for their accidental Diſeaſes by Simples; and the People ſo peaceful, there's no Want of a Lawyer among them; and if any Difference happens, a third Perſon makes up the Matter without the Charge of a Law-Suit. This Country is divided into ſix Counties or Diviſions, and each County ſends ſix Members to the Aſſembly at *Philadelphia*. *Cheſter* 6; *New-Caſtle* 6; *Kent* 6; *Bucks* 6; *Suſſex* 6; and *Philadelphia* 6. All theſe mention'd Places have yearly Fairs, and weekly Markets, being very conveniently ſituated for Commerce with the Country about them.

They have excellent Copper Mines, which produce better Copper than any in *England*, both for Colour and Fineneſs. Coal Mines have been lately found; and ſeveral mineral Waters that perform the ſame Office as *Bath*, *Tunbridge*, or *Epſom*. There is alſo found good Stone for Building, that proves handſome and laſting, and another thin Stone which they tile their Houſes with, being much neater than our *Engliſh* Tile. Alſo Loadſtones, and the *Salamander* Stone, having a Subſtance like Cotton in the Veins, which will not conſume in the Fire.

The Woods produce Wolves, Panthers, Bears, Deer, Hares, Antelopes, Foxes, Rackoons, Rabbets, Squirrels, Bevers, *&c.* whoſe Skins yield great Profit to the

the Taker; and a Creature call'd a *Poſſum*, that has a falſe Belly into which the young ones retire in time of Dahger: Alſo the Flying Squirrel, with Wings like thoſe of a Bat; and I have often ſeen it fly from Tree to Tree.

Red Deer, Buffalos, and Elks are common in the Woods, and delicious Food; but they are generally purchas'd from the *Indians*, (though at a very reaſonable Rate) they being the People that beſt know how to hunt them. There is a Reward given them for killing a Bear or Wolf, which has very much leſſen'd the Number of both; though any Perſon has the Liberty to hunt, fiſh, or fowl, without being moleſted. There's alſo plenty of Otters about the Rivers, and ſuch a Multitude of Frogs in the *Swamps* * that they diſturb you with their Croaking; eſpecially the *Bull Frog*, that makes a Noiſe ſomething like that Beaſt, and is the Baſe to all the Others.

If the diſtreſs'd People of *England* knew the Comforts of *Penſylvania*, and the eaſy Means there is of a Livelihood, they would never ſtay where they are, in a continual Scene of Want and Miſery. Even the meaneſt Servant has better Wages than thoſe in *England*. If criminal Perſons were ſent over there, they would find Employment, and yet be reſtrain'd in the Vices for which they were puniſh'd: for a Thief there is to return Four-fold what he has ſtole; and if he has not wherewithal to do that, he is compell'd to work it out. But every thing is in ſuch Plenty there, they would have no Occaſion to exerciſe their Talents that Way.

* *A* Swamp *is much of the ſame Kind as the* Boggs *in* Ireland.

Their Beef, Mutton, Pork, Lamb, Veal, &c. is equal to our Meat in *England*, with which they trade to the *Leeward Iſlands*, and bring in Return, Rum, Sugar, Molaſſes, and Pieces of Eight. Their Horſes are ſtrong, handſom, and hardy, and ſeldom feed on any thing but Graſs; and after the hardeſt Day's Work, are turn'd out hot into the Fields, yet get no Harm.

The Country produces great Numbers of Apple and Pear Trees, with which they make great Quantities of Cider and Perry, that is very wholſome and well taſted.

There are many large, beautiful, well built Towns in the Province of *Penſylvania*, of which, as I ſaid before, *Philadelphia* is the chief. It is a noble, large, and Populous City, ſtanding on as much Ground as our *Engliſh* City of *Briſtol*, ſeated upon a Neck of Land form'd by the Rivers *Delaware* and the *Schuylkill*, both navigable many Leagues above the City. It is built ſquare in Form of a Cheſs-Board, with each Front facing one of the Rive

There are ſeveral Streets near two Miles long, as wide as *Holborn*, and better built, after the *Engliſh* Manner. The chief are *Broad-ſtreet*, *King-ſtreet*, and *High-ſtreet*, tho' there are ſeveral other handſom Streets that take their Names from the Productions of the Country; as *Mulberry*, *Walnut*, *Beech*, *Saſſafras*, *Cedar*, *Vine*, *Aſh*, and *Cheſnut Streets*. From theſe Streets run great Numbers of Courts, Yards, and Allies, with well-built Houſes in 'em. There are ſeveral Coves and Docks where large Ships are built; and by a moderate Computation, there has been launch'd from the Stocks of this City in forty Years, near 300 Sail of Ships, beſides Small-Craft, which may in ſome ſort give us an Idea of the Opulency of the Place. Many of their Merchants keep their Coaches, and the Tradeſmens Shops and Streets are well frequented.

All

All Religions are tolerated here, which is one Means to increaſe the Riches of the Place. The People of the Church of *England* as by Law eſtabliſh'd, have a neat, well-built Church, founded in the Year 1695, and I am inform'd the Foundation is laid for another. The *Quakers* (who are the major Part of the Inhabitants) have ſeveral Meetings. There is a *Swediſh* reform'd Church, Mr. *Rudman* the Incumbent, a Man of ſingular Learning and Piety; who is as much follow'd by the *Quakers*, when he preaches, as the *Proteſtants*. I ſhall beg leave to give one Inſtance of his Humility and Piety. When Subſcriptions were taking in to build the Church, he ſubſcribed a conſiderable Sum; but when call'd upon for the Money, he had it not in his Power to pay it; yet to keep his Word, he contracted with the Maſter-Builder for ſo much a-day, to carry the Hod, till he had work'd his Subſcription-Money out. This was an Inſtance of his Piety and Zeal for Religion; and I fancy if Churches were to be built after the ſame Manner in a certain Iſland, the Work would go but ſlowly on. There are ſingle Houſes upon the Key that have coſt 6000 *l.* the Building. *Mr. Badcock*'s Brew-houſe is a noble, large Building, and has in it one ſingle Veſſel that will hold eight Ton of Liquor.

In this City are held the Courts of the Province, and the Aſſembly meet here, which is in the nature of a dependent Parliament, as in thoſe Cities of *France* that are diſtant from the Capital. There are three Fairs in the Year, and every Week two Markets. In time of the Fairs the City is ſo throng'd, as well as the adjacent Plantations, that it is hard to find a Lodging.

The Government and Conſtitutions are the ſame as in *England*.

Their Council is compos'd of the Proteſtants and Quakers, but the Publick Officers are taken out of the former. The Governor is nominated by the King of *England*, and the reſt of the civil Officers are, Maſter of the Rolls, four Judges, a Judge of the Admiralty, Secretary, Attorney-General, Treaſurer, Publick-Regiſter, Clerk of the Peace, as alſo a Commiſſary, and a Surveyor-General. Theſe, with eight Members of the Council, form the Government of the City. The Number of the Inhabitants is generally ſuppos'd to be upwards of 25000 beſides Slaves. There is hardly any Trade in *England* but the ſame may be met with in *Philadelphia*; and every Mechanick has better Wages; a Journeyman Taylor has twelve Shillings a Week, beſides his Board; and every other Trade in Proportion has the ſame Advantage.

There is a Poſt-Office lately erected, which goes to *Boſton* in *New-England*, *Charles Town* in *Carolina*, and the other neighbouring Places. The uncultivated Ground, which is not grubb'd, ſells for ten times the Value it did at firſt; though there is none of that ſort within ten Miles round the City: And that within the Neighbourhood that was ſold for ten Pound at firſt, will fetch above three hundred now. All Women's Work is very dear there, and that proceeds from the Smallneſs of the Number, and the Scarcity of Workers; for even the meaneſt ſingle Women marry well there, and being above Want are above Work. The Proprietor of this fine Country (as I ſaid before) is *William Penn*, Eſq; who has a fine Seat call'd *Penſbury*, built on three Iſlets, if I may ſo call 'em; for a Branch of the River *Delaware* runs thrice round it. In his Orchards and Gardens may be found all the Fruits, Roots, and Herbs that are in *England*, and many more peculiar to the Country. There is very good

Paper

Paper made in *Penſylvania*, Linen, Druggets, Crapes, Camblets, and Serges, with which they trade. Moſt of the Merchants, and ſome Tradeſmen, have handſome Country-Houſes, well and conveniently furniſh'd. No Inſults from the *Indians* were ever heard of here, which is more than any of our other Plantations upon the Continent can ſay; neither are there any of them us'd as Slaves, but they are paid as well as the *Europeans* for their Commodities or Labour; and there are more Chriſtians among them than in any other Nation in *America*, for their Number. Moſt of them bring up their Children to read and write, and ſome of them are bound Apprentice to the *Europeans*, who prove as good Workmen at the Buſineſs they follow as their Maſters. In ſhort, in the midſt of War they enjoy the Tranquillity of Peace. They are too far diſtant from the Sea to fear the Invaſion of a foreign Enemy, and there are ſeveral Places of Strength upon the River of *Delaware*, before they can arrive at *Philadelphia*. Yet when I was there, the Town was alarm'd with a falſe Report that the *French* had landed within the Bay, and committed ſeveral Acts of Hoſtility. It was judg'd by ſome, that this Report was ſpread abroad, on purpoſe to ſee how active the People would be to defend themſelves, and whether the *Quakers* were to be depended upon in caſe of an Invaſion. The Governor got at the Head of about 700 Men, and exhorted the *Brethren* to ſtand up for the Defence of their Lives and Eſtates; but they declar'd the carnal Weapon did not belong to them, yet they would retire and pray for us. The People of the Town brought out their Proviſion and Liquor, and freely gave it among the Soldiers, who made as free with it. Before Night, News came that it was a falſe Alarm, which I believe did not diſpleaſe any of us.

In the Heat of the Day I ſometimes took a Walk with ſome of the Town to *Fair Mount*, a pleaſant Place ſhaded with Trees on the River *Schuylkill*. As we were coming home one Day, deep in Diſcourſe with one another, as I was ſtepping over a Stile, I ſaw ſtretch'd on the Ground before me a Snake, as I ſuppoſe aſleep. I had not Power to draw my Leg back again, but my Foot fell juſt upon the Head and part of the Neck of the Reptile, more by the particular Direction of Providence, than my Deſign. It ſprung up quick, and twiſted round my Right Leg, and ſome part of my Thigh. However, I kept my Foot fix'd faſt upon its Head, and in a little time it fell down dead. It is almoſt impoſſible for Words to deſcribe what I felt at this Accident; the very Touch of it about my Leg and Body had very near taken away my Breath; and it was the greateſt Providence in the World I did not take my Foot from the Head of the Snake; for if I had, it would certainly have bit me. It was a conſiderable time before I could ſhake off my Apprehenſion, and I was downright ſick with the Fright the whole Day after. Some of my Companions had the Curioſity to meaſure it: It was in Length two Yards nine Inches, and ten Inches about from the Neck to within half a Yard of the Tail. I remember very well, after this Accident, whenever I had Occaſion to croſs a Stile, in *Penſylvania* or *Old England*, I ever took Care to look before me; ſo laſting is the Impreſſion of Fear and Danger upon the Minds of Men.

I continu'd at *Philadelphia* near four Months, and was very well entertain'd by the Gentlemen of the Place: I am pleas'd I have it in my Power to pay them my publick Acknowledgment of Thanks for all their Favours; particularly the Reverend Mr. *Brooks*, whom

whom I met with by Chance at *Philadelphia:* His Buſineſs there was to raiſe Subſcriptions for a new Church near *New-York:* When he heard of my Misfortunes, he was ſo generous and charitable as to offer to lend me a Sum of Money he had in his Hands, upon my bare Word only, which I was to return to him from *England* by the Society for Propagating the Goſpel in Foreign Parts. As I was not in want of it, I did not accept his intended Favour, but I ſhall ever gratefully remember his kind Intentions.

I muſt not forget the many Obligations I had the Honour to receive from his Excellency Governor *Evans*, nor Mr. *Evans* the Commiſſary, who was particularly civil to me. Theſe Gentlemen, tho' of the ſame Name, are no otherwiſe related than by marrying the Daughters of Mr. *Moor*, the Collector of the King's Cuſtoms. The Commiſſary is juſt gone for *Philadelphia* again, having been in *England* near a Twelvemonth, about an Affair between the preſent Governor Sir *William Keith* and him, relating to the King's Cuſtoms. Among the reſt of my Friends, I muſt not forget the facetious Mr. *Staples*, Dancing-Maſter, who was the firſt Stranger of *Philadelphia* that did me the Honour of a Viſit, and to his merry Company I owe the paſſing of many a dull Hour, that probably might have lain heavy upon the Hands of a Man under my Circumſtances, deprived of Fortune in a ſtrange Country, having no Friends, in whoſe Power it was to aſſiſt me, nearer than *England*; for Mr. *Jones* was too much involv'd in his own troubleſome Affairs at *Bermuda*, to expect any thing from him. But the Generoſity of the *Philadelphians* is rooted in their Natures; for it is the greateſt Crime among them not to ſhow their utmoſt Civility to Strangers: And if I were oblig'd to live out of my native Country,

I ſhould not be long puzzled in finding a Place of Retirement, which ſhould be *Philadelphia*. There the Oppreſs'd in Fortune or Principles may find a happy *Aſylum*, and drop quietly to their Graves without Fear or Want.

In the Beginning of *Auguſt*, News arriv'd that the Fleet would be ready to ſail from *Kakatan* the latter End of the Month, ſo that I now began to bend my Thoughts towards my native Country. I pick'd up at *Philadelphia* four more Companions that intended the ſame Voyage; and *Auguſt* 5 we took leave of our Friends, and the lovely City of *Philadelphia*, which I ſhall always remember with the utmoſt Satisfaction. We hir'd a Boat to carry us down the *Delaware*, and lay the firſt Night at a Planter's, an Acquaintance of one of my Companions, who treated us with the uſual Civilities of the Country. The next Day we din'd on Board our Boat, and at Night arriv'd at *Lewis*, about 50 Leagues from *Philadelphia*, and 20 from the Sea. We ſtaid here three Days. This Town is the Capital of *Suſſex* County, and is built upon the *Hoorkill*, a River that runs into the *Delaware*. A little below begins the Bay of *Delaware*, which is form'd by Cape *William* and Cape *James*, this laſt is the utmoſt Bounds of *Penſylvania*. While we ſtaid here, I had the Curioſity to go into the Woods to ſee 'em gather Honey, it being free for any one, which proceeds from its great Plenty; and you may buy the beſt Bees-wax at *Philadelphia* for four Pence a Pound. At *Lewis* we had ſome of the largeſt Oyſters and Cockles I ever ſaw in my Life; ſome of the former were ſix Inches Diameter out of the Shell, and very well taſted. At this Place they make a rich Soup, compos'd of theſe, and other Shell-fiſh, which is very nouriſhing and palatable. From *Lewis* we were to walk over an Iſthmus of eight Mile,

Mile, that parts *Delaware* River, and *Cheſapeak* Bay, which would ſave us three or four Days Sailing, for we had Notice of a Ship call'd the *Globe*, a new Veſſel of near five hundred Ton, and twenty-four Guns that was at *Kakatan*, and would be willing to receive Paſſengers. We ſet out from *Lewis* with Horſes to carry what little Baggage we had, but we choſe to walk it on Foot our ſelves. We din'd at a Pleaſant Plantation about the mid-way of our Journey, but found it a difficult matter to prevail upon a Couple of young Girls to come near us at firſt, for they took us for Privateers; but at laſt we prevail'd upon 'em, and they call'd their Father, *&c.* who made very much of us. One of the Girls perceiving I had a Watch in my Hand to ſee what time of Day it was, begg'd to look upon it; but it was very pleaſant to ſee her Fear, when ſhe touch'd it, and would not be perſuaded but it was alive, from its going, and the Noiſe it made. I ask'd her if ſhe had never ſeen or heard of a Watch before. She told me ſhe had never ſeen one, but her Siſter had read of 'em. I only mention this to ſhew the Simplicity and Innocence of thoſe Inhabitants of *America*, that live retir'd in the Country; for they told me they had neither of 'em been four Mile from their own Houſe in their Lives.

We took Leave of our Planter and his Family, and got that Night to a Plantation on *Cheſapeak* Bay, where we lay all Night, and were well entertain'd. The next Day we ſet about getting a Boat to carry us to *Kakatan*; but we met with a great deal of Difficulty in procuring one, and were three Days before we could ſucceed; but at laſt we got one by Accident, that was coming up the Bay. We got on Board, and arriv'd at *Kakatan* the ſame Evening. *Kakatan* is no more than a large Cove, where all the Fleet rendezvous in order to

ſet

ſet Sail for *England*. There are ſome few Houſes ſcatter'd up and down the Bay, which go at great Rates upon this Occaſion. It lies about ten Leagues up the River of *Cheſapeak*; which River divides *Virginia* and *Maryland*. It is the greateſt River upon the Continent in the *Engliſh* Dominions, and the fartheſt navigable up in the Country; and many other Rivers fall into it. We enquir'd for the *Globe*, and ſoon agreed with the Captain for his great Cabin, at a reaſonable Rate, and he ſeem'd pleas'd with his Company. We provided what little Neceſſaries we wanted, as ſome freſh Proviſions, Liquor, &c. and on *Sept.* 4. the Commadore hung out the Signal for Sailing.

I thought it was a noble Sight to ſee ſo many Ships under Sail all together. There were upwards of two hundred Sail of Merchant-Men, beſides four Sail of Men of War for our Convoy.

We drove down the River, and at Night got over-againſt the *Virginia* Capes, Cape *Henry* and Cape *Charles*, which form the Mouth of *Cheſapeak* Bay. The next Day we left the main Land aſtern, and we had Orders from the Commadore to ſpread our ſelves, for fear we ſhould fall foul of each other in the Night. We continu'd Sailing ſeveral Days together with a proſperous Gale. *Sept.* 28, the Skies threaten'd us with a Storm; we reev'd our Sails in Expectation of it, but it blew ſo violently at laſt that we were oblig'd to lie under a reeft Foreſail; and it was well we had a good ſtout Ship under us, or we had periſh'd. Our Fleet was ſoon ſcatter'd and we ſaw ſeveral of them ſink in View, with their whole Crew; and it was not in the Power of the other Ships to ſuccour 'em. I now began to think I ſhould be bury'd in the Deep, tho' our Captain always gave us great Hopes in the Goodneſs and Strength of the Ship; for ſhe was well rigg'd and fitted, it being her

her first Voyage. We were terribly toss'd all Night, and when the Morning dawn'd, we could not perceive one of the Fleet; so we were oblig'd to Sail alone, which gave me many melancholy Reflections: However, we had this to comfort us, that the Storm was abated; and the next Day, to my great Joy, we discover'd forty of our scatter'd Fleet, and one Man of War. When we could come within Hailing, we receiv'd a dismal Account or the Loss of above thirty of the Fleet, that founder'd at Sea. Some of the Men were sav'd, as also part of the Cargo of seven or eight, but the rest went to the Bottom.

One Reason of the Weakness of the Ships was their being unsheath'd; and staying four Months beyond their usual Time, the Worms had got into their Bottoms.

We sail'd together with a fair Wind till we came upon the Coast of *France*, and then we had the Misfortune of being dispers'd in the Night; and our Danger was the greater in being so near an Enemy's Country. The next Day we perceiv'd a Sail making up to us: We soon discover'd it was a *French* Privateer. There were three Ships of us in Company: we got together to consult, and at last it was agreed to prepare for the Fight, though in a very poor Condition for an Engagement. Some of the Sailors advis'd us to meet 'em, which Advice was taken. We immediately crouded all the Sail we could, and got our Hands upon Deck, Passengers and all; and having the Wind of 'em, we bore down upon 'em, which had the desired Effect; for assoon as they perceiv'd us chasing 'em, they made all the Sail they could to get from us, and in a little time got out of our Sight. We were very well pleas'd with our Stratagem, and continu'd our Course.

November

November 3, we discover'd *England*, whose Chalky Cliffs gave us all a vast Delight. We coasted along the Channel with the pleasing Hopes of once more setting our Feet upon our native Country; and *Nov.* 7. we got safe into *Deal* Harbour. We staid there but one Night, and hir'd Horses to go to *Canterbury*; from whence we took a Coach to *Gravesend*, and the next Day went in the Passage-Boat to *London*. As we were going up the River, a Ship outward-bound came so suddenly upon us, that we were in the utmost Danger of being run over. Most of the Passengers got up, ready to lay hold of the Tackling of the Ship to save themselves; but by Providence, she mist us by about two Inches. This put me in Mind of the Uncertainty of Human Life, and that a Man may meet with Death, when he imagines himself past all Danger.

I landed at *London*, *Nov.* 15. 1710. I gave God Thanks for his many and signal Mercies, where I hope I am settled for the Remnant of my Life, without trusting my self any more to the Dangers of the tempestuous Sea.

FINIS.